

HEMPSTEAD'S  
SCHOOL HISTORY  
— OF —

ARKANSAS

F. F. HANSELL & BRO., Publishers,  
NEW ORLEANS.

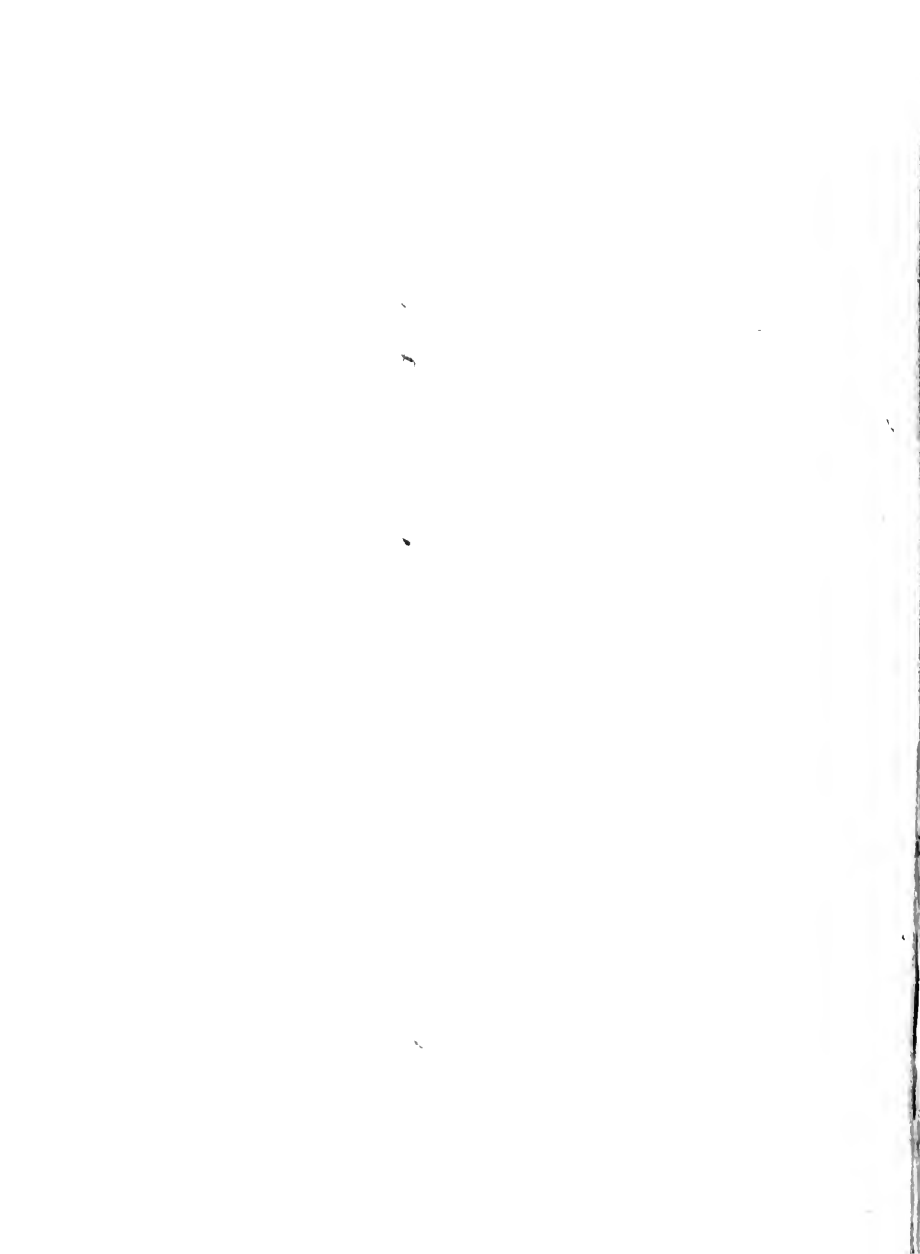












A  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
STATE OF ARKANSAS.  
FOR THE  
USE OF SCHOOLS.

---

BY  
FAY HEMPSTEAD,  
*of Little Rock.*

---

NEW ORLEANS:  
PUBLISHED BY F. F. HANSELL & BRO.

PRACTICAL EDUCATIONAL SERIES,

PUBLISHED BY

F. F. HANSELL & BRO.,

NEW ORLEANS.

---

CHAMBERS' TWENTY LESSONS IN BOOK-KEEPING.

DUVAL'S STUDENTS' HISTORY OF MISSISSIPPI.

HANSELL'S PRIMARY SPELLER.

HANSELL'S SCHOOL HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES.

HANSELL'S HIGHER HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES.

HANSELL'S PRACTICAL PENMANSHIP, 8 Nos.

HANSELL'S TRACING BOOKS, 3 Nos.

HANSELL'S PRACTICAL DICTIONARY.

HEMPSTEAD'S SCHOOL HISTORY OF ARKANSAS.

NICHOLSON'S PRIMARY ARITHMETIC.

NICHOLSON'S INTERMEDIATE ARITHMETIC.

NICHOLSON'S COMPLETE ARITHMETIC.

NICHOLSON'S ADVANCED ARITHMETIC.

NICHOLSON'S ELEMENTARY ALGEBRA.

PRACTICAL SCHOOL RECORD.

PRACTICAL SCHOOL REGISTER.

---

COPYRIGHT

1889.

F. F. HANSELL & BRO.

---

PRESS OF  
L. GRAHAM & SON,  
NEW ORLEANS.

ELECTROTYPED BY  
T. A. SLATTERY & BRO.,  
NEW ORLEANS.

## PREFACE.

---

In offering this work for the use of Schools the author has endeavored to put in a small space the principal incidents connected with the history of the State of Arkansas, in such form as to be serviceable to both teacher and scholar. Of course, the limits of a work of the kind prevent any extended account of incidents or particulars. Wherever these are desired, resort must necessarily be had to larger works on the subject. The aim of the work is to furnish an outline or general sketch of the State's history, sufficient to give an understanding of its leading features; to set forth the manner of its rise and progress from earliest times to the present date. Striving always to make it accurate and exact, the extent to which I may have been successful therein must now be left to the judgment of a considerate public.

FAY HEMPSTEAD.

LITTLE ROCK, Ark., March 15th, 1889.



# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

## I.—THE COLONIAL PERIOD.

	PAGE.
From earliest times to the year 1803 .....	7-42

### CHAPTER I.—PRELIMINARY.

1, Acquisition. 2, Area. 3, Indian Occupants. 4, Osages and Quapaws. 5, Treaties. 6, Cession by the Quapaws. 7, The Arkansa Indians. 8, Their name. 9, Spelling of the name. Pro-nunciaton. 10, Supposed meaning of the name .....	8-13
------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	------

### CHAPTER II—1541 TO 1686—DE SOTO, LA SALLE, AND THE EARLY EXPLORERS.

1, De Soto. 2, His journey. 3, De Soto at Hot Springs. 4, His death. 5, Marquette and Joliet. 6, Hennepin. 7, La Salle. 8, Taking possession. 9, La Salle's return. 10, First White Settlement .....	14-22
------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------

### CHAPTER III—1684 TO 1699—LA SALLE, DE TONTI AND IBERVILLE.

, La Salle in France. 2, Sailing of the Fleet. 3, Loss of the Ships. 4, Fort St. Louis. 5, Death of La Salle. 6, Joutel in command. 7, At the Arkansas Post. 8, Ascending the Mississippi. 9, Reaching the Upper Country. 10, De Tonti. 11, Iberville. 12, Sailing of the Expedition. 13, Entering the Mississippi. De Tonti's letter.....	22-28
--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------

### CHAPTER IV—1700 TO 1800—FRENCH AND SPANISH GOVERNORS.

1, Colonization. 2, Sauvolle, first Governor. 3, Crozat. 4, The Company of the West. 5, John Law's grant. 6, French Governors. 7, Cession to Spain. 8, Spanish Governors. 9, Grants of lands. 10, Grant to the Winter families. 11, Census taken. 12, Retrocession to France. 13, Settlement of Upper Louisiana.....	29-36
----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------

### CHAPTER V—1800 TO 1803—THE LOUISIANA PURCHASE.

1, Trouble with Spain. 2, Closing the port of New Orleans. 3, Proposals of purchase. 4, Negotiations. 5, France agrees to sell.	
---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	--

	PAGE.
6, Conclusion of the transaction. 7, General rejoicing over the matter. The amount paid. 8, Extent of the cession. 9, Obtaining possession.....	36-42
REVIEW QUESTIONS.....	43-45

## II.—THE ANTE-TERRITORIAL PERIOD.

From 1803 to 1819 .....	46-60
-------------------------	-------

### CHAPTER VI—1803 TO 1813—MISSOURI TERRITORY.

1, Territories. District of Louisiana. 2, Territory of Louisiana. 3, District of "Arkansaw." 4, Explorations. 5, Merriwether Lewis, Governor. Osage Treaty. 6, Benjamin A. Howard, Governor. 7, The New Madrid Earthquake. 8, Missouri Territory. 9, Organization.....	46-51
------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------

### CHAPTER VII—1813 TO 1819—ARKANSAS TERRITORY FORMED.

1, Arkansas County. 2, Arkansas Post. 3, Postoffice. 4, Lawrence County. 5, First Treaty with the Quapaws. 6, Counties of Pulaski, Clark and Hempstead. 7, Pulaski County. 8, The city of Little Rock. 9, Laid out as a town. Limits. 10, Clark County. 11, Hempstead County. 12, Arkansas Territory. 13, First Governor	51-60
--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------

## III.—THE TERRITORIAL PERIOD.

From 1819 to 1836 .....	61-93
-------------------------	-------

### CHAPTER VIII—1819 TO 1824—PROGRESS OF THE TERRITORY.

1, Governor James Miller. 2, Organization of the Territory. 3, First Legislature. 4, William E. Woodruff. The Gazette. 5, First Legislature with delegates. 6, Miller County. 7, Phillips County. 8, Crawford County. 9, Independence County. 10, Northern boundary line. 11, Chicot County. 12, Second Treaty with the Quapaws.....	61-69
--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------

### CHAPTER IX—1824 TO 1828—COUNTIES FORMED. FIRST STEAMBOAT. CHEROKEES.

1, Governor George Izard. 2, Conway County. 3, Crittenden County. 4, Izard County. 5, Loveley County. 6, St. Francis County. 7, Lafayette County. 8, Ambrose H. Sevier. 9, First	
----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	--



	PAGE.
Steamboat. 10, Second Treaty with Cherokees. 11, Sevier County.	
12, Washington County .....	69-77

## CHAPTER X—1829—GOVERNOR POPE'S ADMINISTRATION.

1, John Pope, Governor. 2, Governor Pope's services. 3, The Ten Sections of land. 4, Counties formed. 5, Pope County. 6, Union County. 7, Hot Spring County. 8, Monroe County. 9, Jefferson County. 10, Jackson County.....	77-83
-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------

## CHAPTER XI—1830 TO 1833—EMIGRATION AND COUNTIES.

1, Emigration. 2, Southern boundary line. 3, Emigration of Indians. 4, Great overflow of the rivers. 5, Mississippi County. 6, Carroll County. 7, Pike County. 8, Greene County. 9, Scott County. 10, Van Buren County. 11, Johnson County .....	83-89
--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-------

## CHAPTER XII—1833 TO 1836—ADMISSION INTO THE UNION.

1, Improvement of the rivers. 2, William S. Fulton, Governor. 3, White County. 4, Randolph County. 5, Saline County. 6, Marion County. 7, Proceedings for admission into the Union. 8, The Convention. 9, Admission into the Union.....	89-93
REVIEW QUESTIONS .....	93-96

## IV.—THE ANTE-BELLUM PERIOD.

From 1836 to 1861.....	97-133
------------------------	--------

## CHAPTER XIII—THE ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR JAMES S. CONWAY.

1, James S. Conway, first Governor of the State. 2, Madison County. 3, Benton County. 4, Banks. 5, The State Bank. 6, In liquidation. 7, The Real Estate Bank. 8, The Holford Bonds. 9, Assignment. 10, Trustees of the Bank. 11, Funding the Holford Bonds. 12, The Fishback Amendment. 13, First Presidential vote of Arkansas. 14, Political parties. 15, Men of the different political parties in Arkansas. Presidents elected by the several parties.....	97-106
-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	--------

## CHAPTER XIV—1840 TO 1840—THE ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR JAMES S. CONWAY [Continued].

1, Franklin County. 2, Poinsett County. 3, Desha County. 4, Searcy County. 5, Boundary line between Arkansas and Texas. 6, Archibald Yell, second Governor. 7, Yell County. 8, Bradley County. 9, Perry County. 10, William Henry Harrison, President. 11, Census.....	107-112
------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------

**CHAPTER XV — 1840 TO 1846 — THE ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNORS ARCHIBALD YELL AND SAMUEL ADAMS; AND PART OF THAT OF GOVERNOR THOMAS S. DREW.**

	PAGE.
1, New Counties. 2, Ouachita County. 3, Montgomery County.	
4, Newton County. 5, Fulton County. 6, Samuel Adams, Acting Governor. 7, Thomas S. Drew, third Governor. 8, James K. Polk, President. 9, Polk County. 10, Dallas County .....	112-116

**CHAPTER XVI — 1846 TO 1849 — IN THE ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR THOMAS S. DREW.**

1, The War with Mexico. 2, The Texas Revolution. 3, The Annexation of Texas. 4, The War begins. 5, Organization of troops. 6, Battle of Buena Vista. 7, End of the War. 8, Prairie County. 9, Drew County. 10, Ashley County. 11, Resignation of Governor Drew. 12, Zachary Taylor, President.....	117-123
----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------

**CHAPTER XVII — 1849 TO 1861 — THE ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR JOHN SELDEN ROANE; THAT OF GOVERNOR ELIAS N. CONWAY, TWO TERMS, AND THE ELECTION OF GOVERNOR HENRY M. RECTOR.**

1, John Selden Roane, Governor. 2, Federal Judges. 3, Population in seventh census. 4, Calhoun County. 5, Sebastian County. 6, Elias N. Conway, Governor. 7, Columbia County. 8, Franklin Pierce, President. 9, Robert W. Johnson, Senator. 10, Railroads. 11, Governor Conway's second term. 12, James Buchanan, President. 13, Craighead County. 14, Abraham Lincoln, President. Secession of Southern States. 15, Henry M. Rector, Governor. 16, First Railroad and Telegraph line.....	123-131
REVIEW QUESTIONS.....	131-133

**V.—THE PERIOD OF THE CIVIL WAR.**

From 1861 to 1865.....	134-148
------------------------	---------

**CHAPTER XVIII—1861—THE BEGINNING OF THE WAR.**

1, Origin of the War. 2, The Missouri Compromise. 3, Opposition to Slavery. 4, Events leading to the War. 5, The election of Abraham Lincoln. 6, The State Convention of Arkansas. 7, The War Begins. The Ordinance of Secession. 8, Organization of Troops. 9, Field of Operations of Arkansas Troops. 10, General Patrick R. Cleburne.....	131-141
----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------

## CHAPTER XIX—1862 TO 1865.

	PAGE.
1, Harris Flanagin, Governor. 2, Cross County. 3, Woodruff County. 4, Emancipation of the Slaves. 5, Battle of Pea Ridge. 6, The Trans-Mississippi Department. 7, Battle of Prairie Grove. 8, Hardships in Domestic Life. 9, Capture of Arkansas Post. 10, Battle of Helena. 11, Capture of Little Rock. 12, Isaac Murphy, Governor. 13, Battle of Jenkins' Ferry. 14, Price's raid into Missouri. End of the War .....	141-148

## VI.—THE PERIOD SINCE THE WAR.

From 1865 onward.....	149-181
-----------------------	---------

## CHAPTER XX—1865 TO 1871—THE ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR ISAAC MURPHY, AND THAT OF GOVERNOR POWELL CLAYTON.

1, Resumption of Civil Concerns. 2, The Reconstruction Measures. 3, The State Constitution of 1868. 4, Powell Clayton, Governor. 5, Little River County. 6, Sharp County. 7, Public Measures. 8, Grant County. 9, Boone County. 10, The Census of 1870. 11, Nevada County. 12, Logan County. 13, Lincoln County. 14, The St. Louis, Iron Mountain and Southern Railroad.....	149-154
------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------

## CHAPTER XXI—1871 TO 1874—THE ADMINISTRATIONS OF GOVERNORS O. A. HADLEY AND ELISHA BAXTER.

1, O. A. Hadley, Acting Governor. 2, U. S. Grant, President. 3, The Election between Brooks and Baxter. 4, Elisha Baxter, Governor. 5, His Administration. 6, Clay County. 7, Baxter County. 8, Garland County. 9, Faulkner County. 10, Lonoke County. 11, Cleveland County. 12, Howard County. 13, Lee County. 14, Stone County. 15, The Brooks and Baxter War. The Constitution of 1874 .....	155-162
-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------

## CHAPTER XXII—1874 TO 1883—THE ADMINISTRATIONS OF GOVERNORS A. H. GARLAND, WILLIAM R. MILLER AND THOMAS J. CHURCHILL.

1, Augustus H. Garland, Governor. 2, Finances of the State. 3, Governor Garland's Administration. 4, William R. Miller, Governor. 5, Rutherford B. Hayes, President. 6, J. D. Walker, Senator. 7, Governor Miller's Administration. The Census of 1880. 8, Thomas J. Churchill, Governor. 9, James A. Garfield, President. 10, The Fishback Amendment. 11, Chester A. Arthur, President.....	162-168
----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------

CHAPTER XXIII—1883 TO 1889—THE ADMINISTRATIONS OF GOVERNORS  
JAMES H. BERRY AND SIMON P. HUGHES.

	PAGE.
1, James H. Berry, Governor. 2, Cleburne County. 3, Death of Chief Justice E. H. English. 4, Grover Cleveland, President. 5, Simon P. Hughes, Governor. 6, James K. Jones, Senator. 7, Governor Hughes' Administration. 8, Benjamin Harrison, Presi- dent. 9, James P. Eagle, Governor.....	169-175

CHAPTER XXIV—CONCLUSION. GENERAL SUMMARY.

1, Review. 2, The Resources and Advantages of Arkansas. 3, Agricultural Products. 4, Geographical Situation. 5, Railroads. 6, Educational facilities. 7, Distinguished Citizens. 8, Climate.....	175-179
REVIEW QUESTIONS.....	180-181

APPENDIX A.

List of Governors of Arkansas and of the country out of which Arkansas was formed .....	182-185
--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	---------

APPENDIX B.

Chronological summary of leading events.....	186-203
----------------------------------------------	---------

APPENDIX C.

Table of population of the State and the counties at various dates.....	204-205
Table of gains in population at various dates .....	206

APPENDIX D.

The Civil Government of the Country .....	207-227
The Military Government of the Country.....	227-229

# I.—THE COLONIAL PERIOD.

*EXTENDING FROM EARLIEST TIMES TO THE YEAR 1803, WHEN THE COUNTRY PASSED INTO THE POSSESSION OF THE UNITED STATES, IN THE LOUISIANA PURCHASE.*

---

## CHAPTER I.

### *Preliminary.*

**I. Acquisition.** The territory of which the present State of Arkansas consists was acquired by the United States from France, in the year 1803, in what is known as the Louisiana Purchase. In the year 1682 France acquired, by right of discovery and by taking possession, an immense region in America, extending from the Gulf of Mexico on the south, northward to what are now the British possessions, and from the Mississippi River on the east to the Pacific Ocean on the west, above Mexico, which they named Louisiana in honor of Louis XIV, then King of France. This Province of Louisiana they held from that time until 1763, when it was ceded to Spain in the Treaty of Paris. Spain held the country until 1800, when she ceded it back to France in the Treaty of St. Ildefonso (*Saint eel-da-fon-ze*). and in 1803 France

---

CHAPTER I.—What is the first period treated of in this history called? To what time does it extend? Why terminating at that date?

1.—At what date and in what transaction was the country of which the State of Arkansas consists acquired by the United States? At what date and in what manner had France acquired the country? Describe its extent and how named and for whom. How long did France hold it on her first ownership? To what country was it then ceded, and in what treaty? How long did Spain hold it? To what country was it then ceded, and in what treaty? How did France dispose of it, and at what date? What number of States and Territories have been formed in whole or in part out of the country so acquired?

sold it to the United States. Out of the country thus purchased there have been twelve whole States and three whole Territories, formed; Arkansas being one of the States formed.

2. **Area.** The present State of Arkansas comprises an area stated at 52,198 square miles, or about 33,406,720 acres of land. In point of fact the area is constantly changing along the banks of the Mississippi river, sometimes gaining and sometimes losing. It contains seventy-five counties, and in the Government Census of 1880 contained a population of 802,525 persons. The population in 1888 was estimated to be over 1,000,000.

3. **Indian Occupants.** From earliest times the country was in possession of the Indians, whom Columbus so named when he discovered America, from the belief that the coast he had touched upon was a part of India. As they had occupied the land from time immemorial, they were called the Aborigines (*ab-o-ridge-i-nes*) of America—a word meaning people occupying the land from the beginning.

4. **Osages and Quapaws.** The immediate tribes occupying what is now the State of Arkansas were the Osages (*O-sages*) and Quapaws (*Quaw-paws*), with whom were the Ozarks; both Quapaws and Ozarks being portions of the Arkansa tribe. The Osages occupied the country north of the Arkansas River, into Missouri, eastward to the Mississippi River, and westward into the Indian Territory. The Quapaws occupied principally south of the Arkansas River, eastward to and even beyond the Mississippi, southward into Louisiana and westward into Texas. They also occupied some little of the country north of the river.

---

2.—What is the area of the present State of Arkansas in square miles? What in acres? How many counties does it contain? What was the population in the tenth census of 1880?

3.—Who were the original occupants of the land? Why were they so named and by whom? By what other name are they called and what is the meaning of it?

4.—What tribes occupied the country of which the State of Arkansas now consists? State what portion of the State each tribe occupied.

**5. Treaties.** The United States obtained the land from these tribes by treaties made with the Osages in 1808 and 1818, and with the Quapaws in 1818 and in 1824. In the Quapaw Treaty of 1818 they ceded to the United States, for an agreed consideration, all of their lands lying in Arkansas, except a body of about 1,500,000 acres lying in the centre of the Territory, and running from a point on the south bank of the Arkansas River, opposite the Post of Arkansas, in a southwesterly course to the Ouachita River; thence up the Ouachita River and up the Saline River, "until a due north line would strike the Arkansas River at the Little Rock." This reservation was surveyed for them by the United States in 1818, the western line of it terminating in what was called the "point of rocks" in the eastern portion of the city of Little Rock. Ever since that time this line, called the Quapaw line, has been used as the basis of making surveys, and property is still described in deeds and conveyances as to whether it lies east or west of the Quapaw line. The west line of the United States Arsenal or Garrison grounds in Little Rock lies along this boundary line, and for a long time the line was the eastern boundary of the town.

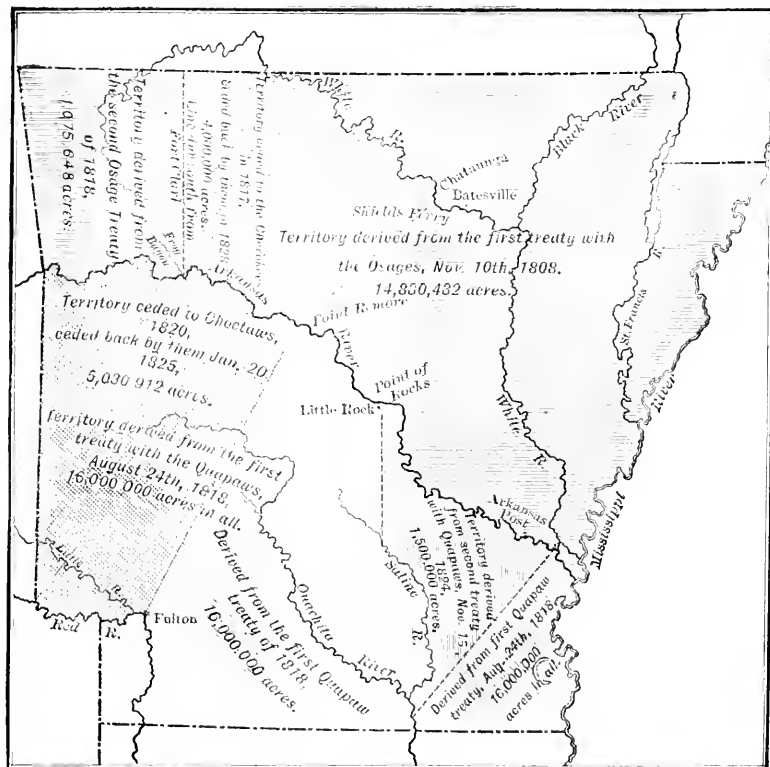
**6. Cession by the Quapaws.** In 1824 the Quapaws ceded to the United States the lands embraced in this reservation, whereby their title to lands in the State became extinct. For certain considerations they moved out of the State and settled on the Red River in Louisiana, near the great Raft. There many of their tribe died from the sickly nature of the country, and their crops were destroyed year after year by the overflow of the river; so they broke up their settlement there and moved back to Arkansas. As

---

**5**—How and at what dates did the United States obtain the lands from these tribes? What did the Quapaw tribe cede in their first treaty? What did they reserve? State where the boundary line of this reservation ran. What is it still referred to as?

**6**—At what date did the Quapaws cede this reservation to the United States? What became of the tribe?

they had no place where they could rightfully remain, the government in 1833 made a third treaty with them, by which they were moved to the extreme northeast corner of the Indian Territory, where they now are, but their numbers have dwindled down to less than 200. The following map will show the portions obtained from these treaties :



MAP SHOWING VARIOUS PORTIONS OF ARKANSAS OBTAINED THROUGH INDIAN TREATIES, TOGETHER WITH AREA AND ACREAGE OF EACH.



**7. The Arkansa Indians.** One of the tribes of Indians living along the banks of the Mississippi River, near the mouth of the Arkansas river, was called the Arkansa Indians, and it is from them that the State takes its name. The Quapaws were a branch or division of the Arkansa tribe. According to Gravier, a Jesuit Missionary in the country of the Illinois from 1684 to 1708, the Arkansa Indians once lived along the banks of the Ohio River, but after a long struggle were driven back by their more powerful adversaries, the Illinois, and being gradually forced down the Mississippi, established themselves on its banks, and along the river which took its name from them. A similar recital was made by a very old Quapaw chief to an Indian agent when the United States Government was negotiating with them concerning the boundaries of certain of their lands, some years after the Louisiana purchase. The Arkansa Indians were first mentioned by Marquette in 1673, but the name Quapaw is found mentioned in DeSoto's expeditions of 1541, under the name of Kappa (*Kah-pah*).

**8. Their Name.** Their name is variously given by the early explorers and writers. Marquette, calls them A-kan-sea, and speaks of a village which they had at the mouth of their river. La Salle's party spoke of their arriving at "the Kapaha (*Kah-pah-hah*) village of Arkansa" (*Ar-kahn-sah*). Joutel (*Zhou-tell*) gives their name as Ac-can-cea (*Oc-con-sah*). Henri de Tonti (*de Ton-tec*) spoke of them as Akancas (*Ah-kahn-sah*), and mentions several of their villages as being along the river. It is probable that the terminal *s* which he gives to their name, the first instance of it, was meant to indicate the plural. The Indian names by which they called the river named after them were the So-tonis and Sma-ha-na (*Smah-hah-nah*), and the names of their

---

**7.**—From what does the State take its name? Where had this tribe formerly lived? When and by whom are they first mentioned? When and where was the Quapaws' name first found?

**8.**—Mention the different ways in which the name was spelled by early explorers and writers. What were the Indian names for the Arkansas river?

villages were Os-o-to-nee, To-ri-man, Ton-ning-gua and Cap-pa (*Cah-pah*). From Cap-pa we have the modern name Quapaw. La Salle's party spoke of their largest village as being named Im-a-ha (*Im-ah-hah*, accent on second syllable).

**9. Spelling of the Name.** Their name is usually spelled by these early writers without either the terminal *w* or terminal *s*, as we now have it, but was undoubtedly pronounced Ar-kan-saw or Ah-kan-sah, a system which we still maintain in the pronunciation of such names as Wichita (*Wish-e-taw*), Ouachita (*Wash-e-taw*) and the like. In all the early laws and official documents of the Government as late as 1826 the name is spelled with the terminal *s-a-w*. In the act of Congress of 1819, creating the Territory, the name occurs ten times, and is spelled *s-a-w* nine times and *s-a-s* only once. The original method of spelling many of the Indian names which we now spell with a terminal *w* was with terminal *a* merely; as, for instance, the name Quapaw was spelled Kap-a-ha by La Salle's party, Cap-pa by De Tonti, Cap-pa by Joutel and Kap-pa by Charlevoix (*Shar-lee-wwah*): all ending in *a*, but pronounced Kah-pah, or something like our present form of Quaw-paw. The names which we now spell Choctaw and Chickasaw were originally spelled Chacta or Chocta and Chick-a-sa, and in the same manner the name Arkansas, which was early spelled with the terminal *w*, but is now spelled with the terminal *s*, was originally spelled without either of them, but was Akansa or Ar-kan-sa (*Ah-kahn-sah*).

A considerable discussion as to the proper method of pronouncing the name having arisen, and found its way into public atten-

**9.**—How was the name usually spelled by the early writers mentioning it? How pronounced? How spelled in the early laws and records of the United States Government? Mention an instance. What was the original method of spelling many of the Indian names which we now spell with the terminal *s* or *w*? Give instances. What declaration did the Legislature of Arkansas make as to their opinion of the proper pronunciation of the name? In what year was this?

tion, some pronouncing it Ar-kan-saw, and others Ar-kan-zas, the Legislature in 1881 passed what is called a concurrent resolution—that is, a resolution agreed to by both the Senate and the House of Representatives, in which they gave it as their opinion, “that the only true pronunciation of the name of the State, is that received by the French from the native Indians, and committed to writing in the French word representing the sound; and that it should be pronounced in three syllables, with the final *s* silent, the *a* in each syllable with the Italian sound, and the accent on the first and last syllables—being the pronunciation formerly universally and now still most commonly used; and that the pronunciation with the accent on the second syllable with the sound of *a* in *man*, and the sounding of the terminal *s*, is an innovation, to be discouraged.”

**10. Supposed Meaning of the Name.** It is frequently stated that the word Arkansas means, in the Indian language, “bow of smoky water,” and that it is compounded of the word *Kansas*, meaning “smoky water,” with the French prefix “*arc*,” meaning “a bow.” This is an evident error. The word Kansas is most probably a variation of the word *Kanses*, which is the possessive case of the word *Kans*, the name of a tribe of Indians existing in considerable strength as late as 1810, in the country now occupied by the State of Kansas. There is no perceptible affinity between *Kans* and *Akan-sa*, the original form.

With relation to “*arc*” being a French prefix meaning “a bow,” it is to be observed that Marquette, the first Frenchman who ever encountered the tribe, *found* the prefix already there, in the word Ar-kan-sea, or, according to Joutel, Ac-can-cea; and hence it could not have been afterwards prefixed. The word is of Indian derivation and its meaning is unknown.

---

**10.**—What common errors exist as to the meaning of the word Arkansas?

## CHAPTER II.

*1541 to 1686 — De Soto, La Salle and the Early Explorers.*

**1. De Soto.** The first white person to traverse the country of which the State of Arkansas now consists, was Hernando De Soto, who, in 1539, sailed from Havana and landed on the coast of Florida, and from there made explorations westward and north-westward in search of gold. In 1541 he reached and discovered the Mississippi River, near an Indian village called Chisca (*Chiz-cah*). He spent nearly a month in making preparations to cross the river, and at the end of that time crossed to the west bank, landing in what is now the State of Arkansas. The precise locality of his crossing is uncertain, but is believed to have been a little below Helena, between the mouth of White River and Helena. Having effected the crossing he marched northward along the bank of the Mississippi until he came to a considerable town called Pa-ca-ha (*Pah-cah-hah*), which he entered, June 19th, 1541. It is not improbable that the town of Pa-ca-ha was located at or near the place where the city of Helena now stands.

**2. His Journey.** He remained at Pa-ca-ha for forty days, and on the 29th of July, 1541, resumed his journey, going northward and northeastward to Casqui (*Caz-kee*), then southwestward to a village called Ouigaute (*Wee-gaw-tay*) or Qui-gau-te, which was probably on the White River. From here he journeyed north-westward through a plain and marshy country until he reached an Indian town called Col-i-go-a, among the mountains. It is believed that these were the Ozark Mountains, as high up probably as Franklin or Washington County. This was the northern and

---

CHAPTER. II.—1.—Who was the first white person to traverse the country which is now the State of Arkansas? In what year was it? At what point is he supposed to have entered? At what village did he stop?

2.—How long did he remain there? In what direction did he journey? What was the northern and western limit of his expedition? In what direction did he then travel?

western limit of his expedition. From here he turned his course southward, and crossed the Arkansas River at some point between the present cities of Dardanelle and Fort Smith.

3. **De Soto at Hot Springs.** He continued his journey southward until he reached and crossed the Ouachita (*Wash-e-taw*) River, and in doing so discovered the celebrated Hot Springs, of what is now Garland County. Shortly afterwards he went into winter quarters at an Indian village called Aut-i-am-que, which is believed to have been somewhere lower down on the banks of the Ouachita River, where he passed the winter of 1541-1542.

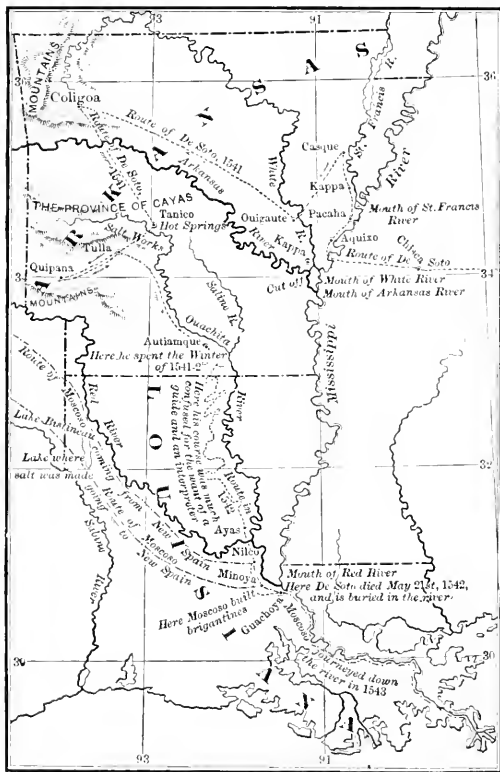
4. **His Death.** In the spring of 1542 he broke up his camp, and moving down the banks of the Ouachita River, in a southeasterly course, passed out of what is now the State. He reached the Mississippi at the mouth of Red River, where there was an Indian village called Gua-cho-ya (*Gwah-cho-yah*). While remaining here he was seized with a fever and died May 21st, 1542, at the age of forty-six years. His body was first secretly buried inside the town, but the Indians having seen him in his illness, and now seeing the freshly-turned earth of his grave, began to suspect that he was dead. To prevent them from actually discovering the fact his body was taken up and was wrapped in a mantle, heavily filled with sand, and at midnight was taken out on the river, where it was sunk in the middle of the stream. When he was about to die he appointed Luys de Moscoso (*Mos-co-so*) his successor. After the burial of De Soto, Moscoso set out on a journey overland toward Mexico, hoping to reach New Spain, as it was called, by this route. They traversed the country as far as the great plains of Texas, but, finding it difficult to sustain life, they turned back and retraced their steps over all of that long and weary way until

---

3.—What river did he next reach? What celebrated place did he discover on the line of his march? At what place did he pass the winter of 1541?

4.—In what direction did he travel in the spring of 1542? Where did he reach the Mississippi River? Give the narrative as to his death and

they came again to Red River, near where they formerly were. They halted at a village called Minoya (*Min-o-yah*), which was near to the village of Gua-cho-ya, the place where De Soto died. They reached this place in December, 1542. Here



MAP SHOWING THE SUPPOSED ROUTE OF DE SOTO AND HIS MEN, WEST OF THE MISSISSIPPI RIVER.

they built seven brigantines, and on the 2d of July of the following year, 1543, they launched upon the river, determined to try and reach New Spain by means of the sea. After encountering many hardships in descending the Mississippi and sailing on the sea, they reached the river and town of Panuco, in Mexico in, September, 1543. Here they were hospitably received, for the inhabitants of Panuco were their countrymen. From here they eventually made their way back, some to Cuba and some to Spain.

burial. What was his age at the time of his death? Whom did he name as his successor? Narrate the incidents of Moscoso's subsequent journeys?

When the news of De Soto's death was communicated to his faithful wife, Isabella Bobadilla (*Bo-bah-tce-Iya*), who was awaiting him in Havana, her heart broke under the intelligence, and in three days she died. She had not received any tidings of him in five years.

**5. Marquette and Joliet.** History gives no account of any other European traversing this particular country until 1673, a period of 131 years. At that date Jacques Marquette (*Mar-kett*) and Louis Joliet (*Zho-tce-aigh*), two French Catholic priests, with an exploring party, entered the Mississippi River, June 17th, 1673, a few miles below Prairie du Chien (*Pra-ree du She-en*) in Illinois, and descended as far as the mouth of the Arkansas River, where the natives exhibited to them European implements, and satisfied them of their contact with Europeans. Having ascertained that the river they were descending emptied into the Gulf of Mexico, and not into the Pacific Ocean, as had been supposed, and believing themselves to be only a short distance from the coast, not more than two or three days' journey, but fearing imprisonment by the Spaniards if they proceeded lower down, whereby the entire fruits of their discoveries would be lost, they turned back from this point and ascended the river.

Marquette wrote an account and made a map and drawings of the country he traversed, derived from what he himself knew, and what was told him by the Indians, and this is the earliest map of the country that was ever made. Its date is about 1673. On it the Arkansa Indians appear under the name Arkansa, located near the mouth of their river. This is the first and earliest time at which their name is found written.

---

5—How long a period elapsed before any other Europeans visited this country so far as history discloses? At what date did any others come? Who were they? Give the narrative as to their journey. Did either of them make a map of the country? If so, who made it? What is its date? Is the location of the Arkansa Indians shown on it? If so, under what name?

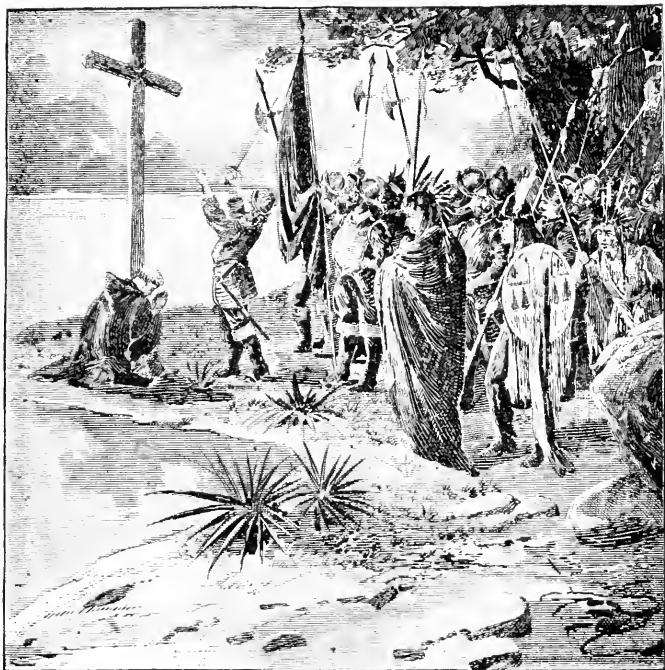
6. **Hennepin.** The next European explorer to visit the country is said to have been Louis Hennepin, a Franciscan Friar, better known as Father Hennepin, who, toward the close of the summer of 1680, with an exploring party, entered the Mississippi by way of Wisconsin, and descended the river for some distance. Historians are not agreed as to how far he descended. Some say that he went no further down than the mouth of the Illinois River, but others say he went as far as the mouth of the Arkansas River, the point previously reached by Marquette. At any rate he went no further than this, where, learning that the seacoast was much further away than had been anticipated, he turned back from this point and ascended the river to the place of starting.

7. **La Salle.** The next exploration was made in 1682 by ROBERT CAVELIER (*Cav-äl-yea*), SIEUR (*Se-ur*) DE LA SALLE, usually called La Salle (*Läh-sal*), a French explorer, who, in the early part of that year, started from Fort Miami (*Mee-ääh-mee*), a trading point which he had established at the mouth of the St. Joseph River, in the country of the Illinois. He took with him a company containing Henry de Tonti, Father Zenobius Membre (*Zen-o-be-us Mam-bray*), a Recollet Missionary, and twenty French and Canadians, in canoes, and explored the Mississippi to its mouth. On his way down he camped at the Chickasaw Bluffs, where Memphis now is, and touched at the Quapaw village at the mouth of the Arkansas River, which he reached March 12th, 1682. On the 6th of April he arrived at the place where the river divides, near the sea, and proceeded to explore each of the three channels leading to the sea, and on the 9th of April, 1682, took formal possession of the coun-

6.—Who is said to have been the next European explorer? At what date did he come? What of his journey?

7.—Who was the next explorer? At what date did he come? How far did he descend the river? By whom was he accompanied? Give incidents of his journey. What is the meaning of the word Sieur? What is a Recollet Missionary?





LA SALLE TAKING FORMAL POSSESSION.

try, which, in honor of his sovereign, Louis XIV, then King of France, he named LOUISIANA. The word *Sieur* (*Sé-ar*) in his name is a title of respect used by the French people. The Recollets, of which order Father Zen-o-bé was a member, were a reformed order of Franciscan Friars.

**8. Taking Possession.** On taking possession La Salle claimed for France all the country watered by the Mississippi or

its tributaries. The act of taking possession was accompanied with some ceremony. On the 8th of April they were at the coast itself, but ascended the river somewhat to find suitable dry land for the purpose of erecting a column to mark their act of taking possession. When a suitable place had been found, out of the reach of the tides, they constructed a column and a cross. To this column, on the 9th of April, 1682, the arms of the king were affixed. The voyagers, who were mustered in line under arms, then chanted a Latin hymn and fired a salute, followed by cries of "Long live the King!" La Salle then, standing by the column, made a proclamation in a loud voice, saying he took possession, in the name of France, of all of Louisiana and all that it contained. After this he affixed the cross to a neighboring tree, saying that "His Majesty, as eldest son of the church, would annex no country to his crown without implanting therein the Christian religion," and that its symbol should now be planted. Then there was more singing of hymns and firing of salutes and cries of "Vive le Roi!" and the ceremonies were ended. In addition to this La Salle buried at the foot of the tree where the cross was planted a leaden plate, on which was the inscription in Latin: "In the reign of Louis the Great. On the 9th of April, 1682, Robert Cavelier, with Sieur de Tonti, envoy, Rev. Father Zenobé Membré, Recollet Missionary, and twenty Frenchmen, the first in this river,\* having explored from its highest village even to its mouth, makes this attestation, the 9th of April, in the year 1682." An attestation of the facts of his journey and the taking possession was also made to him in writing by a notary public, one of the party. On their exploring the river the Frenchmen gave to it the name

---

\*La Salle's claim that he was the first who had descended the river to its mouth was not strictly and literally correct, for we have seen that Moscoso, with the remnant of De Soto's band, had descended from the mouth of Red River 130 years previously. Moscoso, however, was not on an exploring expedition, but was simply trying to escape from the country.

---

try. What extent of country was claimed? What name did the French explorers give to the Mississippi River?

Colbert (*Kul-bair*), in honor of Jean Baptiste (*Zhean Bahtcest*) Colbert, Marquis de Seignelay (*Sci-nce-lay*), a noted minister under Louis XIV. The name, however, did not prevail, but the river continued to be called by the name by which the natives knew it, Mes-cha-se-be (*Mes-chah-see-bee*) or Mississippi.

9. **La Salle's Return.** Having completed the ceremonies of formally taking possession, La Salle with his party ascended the river to Fort Miami, and prepared to return to France to report his discoveries and bring back a colony with him. He departed for France in November of 1682, and reached Paris in the early part of 1683. De Tonti being left in command, remained at Fort St. Louis, or with that place for his headquarters, until 1685, when, receiving the intelligence that La Salle had sailed from France with a fleet, and was coming by way of the Mississippi to join him, he determined to go to the mouth of the Mississippi to meet his chief. Accordingly, in the middle of January, 1686, he set out down the Mississippi for the sea, with thirty Frenchmen and five Indians. Arriving at the mouth of the Mississippi River, and not meeting La Salle, he sent two searching parties along the coast in opposite directions, one in the direction of Mexico and the other in the direction of Carolina or Florida.

After having each proceeded about ninety miles on the search, both parties returned unsuccessful. De Tonti then gave up the search for the time and prepared to return to Fort St. Louis. On



LA SALLE.

---

9 — After the ceremonies of taking possession where did the explorers go? What did De Tonti do? At what date did he begin his voy-

ascending the river he left with the chief of the Bayagoula (*By-a-goo-lah*) tribe, a tribe of Choctaw affinity living along the banks of the Mississippi, a letter which he had written to La Salle, and told the Indians to deliver it to the white man whom they should find ascending the river (meaning La Salle), whom he expected to return by that way.

**10. First White Settlement.** When the party arrived at the Arkansas River, on their return journey, some of the men wished to settle on its banks, on a grant of lands which La Salle had made to De Tonti. De Tonti granted their request, and six of them built a house there, surrounded with stakes, while the rest of the party accompanied De Tonti to Illinois. This was the first white settlement in Arkansas, and the date of it was in the year 1686. The location of the place, as shown on Joutel's map of La Salle's expedition, published in 1695, corresponds with the location of the present Post of Arkansas.

### CHAPTER III.

#### *1684 to 1699 — La Salle, De Tonti, and Iberville.*

**1. La Salle in France.** Upon his return to France, La Salle was received with great favor by Louis XIV, who assisted him to obtain a fleet to transport his colonists, and made him a present of one ship called "La Belle," carrying six guns. A company of 280 persons was made up to return with La Salle, among whom was one of his brothers and two of his nephews. By a patent, dated April 14th, 1684, he was appointed commandant of Louisi-

---

age? What efforts did he make to find his chief? Relate the incident of the letter.

**10.**—What was the first white settlement made in Arkansas? Of what did it consist, and by whom made? At what date? What is to be said of its location?.

**CHAPTER III.—1.**—How was La Salle received on his return to France? What assistance did he receive from the king?

ana, but he did not live to reach the country and exercise the duties of the office.

**2. Sailing of the Fleet.** The fleet sailed from La Rochelle (*Lah-ru-shell*), France, July 24th, 1684, and the course was directed so as to reach the mouth of the Mississippi River, but by mistake they sailed too far to the west, and instead of striking the mouth of the river they landed, in January, 1685, near Corpus Christi (*Cor-pus Chris-tee*), on the coast of Texas. La Salle was convinced of the mistake in direction, and wished to alter the course, but he was opposed by the sailing-master, Beaujeu (*Bo-zhuh*), who persisted in keeping on until they reached the land. Endeavoring to rectify their mistake, they set sail again and proceeded up the coast northeastward and made a landing in the Bay of San Bernardo (*San Bair-nar-do*), at what is now Matagorda, Texas.

**3. Loss of the Ships.** In making the landing the store-ship of the expedition was driven upon an island and sunk. In a short while the sailing-master sailed away to France, taking two of the ships with him; so that La Salle was left with only one ship (*La Belle*) with which to prosecute his discoveries; and in the course of the following summer even this one, being sent across the bay on an excursion, and meeting with an accident, was also sunk.

**4. Fort St. Louis.** Being thus left without any ships with which to journey by water, La Salle endeavored to maintain himself on the land by building a fort called Fort St. Louis, on the coast of Matagorda Bay, at a place now called Dimitt's Point. Here he sustained himself for a while by tilling the soil, but by January, 1687, so many of his colonists had been killed by Indians or had died from disease that only forty remained.

---

2.—When did the fleet sail from France? Narrate the circumstances of the journey. At what place did they land?

3.—Give an account of the loss of the ships?

4.—How did La Salle endeavor to maintain himself after the loss of the ships?



DEATH OF LA SALLE

**5. Death of La Salle.** Leaving half of these at Fort St. Louis he set out on foot with the remainder, endeavoring to reach Canada by a journey overland. He proceeded in a northeasterly direction until March 20th, 1687, when on the banks of the Trinity River in Texas, he, with Moranget (*Mo-ran-zhay*), one of his nephews, was cruelly murdered by Duhaut (*Du-ho*) and L'Archevéque (*Larsh-a-zake*), two of his followers. Of these Duhaut was shortly afterwards killed by Hiens, one of the conspirators; and L'Archevéque went off and joined the Indians. La Salle's body was buried by his faithful friend and follower, Father Anastasius Douay (*Ahn-ahs-taz-i-us Doo-ai*), who was with him when he was killed. With his own hands he dug the great explorer's grave, and planted a cross to mark the spot.

**6. Joutel in Command.** Upon the death of La Salle, Joutel (*Zhou-tell*), a commander in the expedition, organized the remaining followers into a band, among whom were La Salle's brother and the remaining nephew, and proceeded on their journey. After enduring many hardships and privations, but being guided and assisted by friendly Indians, they arrived July 24th, 1687, at the fort established on the banks of the Arkansas River by De Tonti's men the year before.

**7. At the Arkansas Post.** A short distance before they reached the river they met Indians with axes in their hands, going to gather bark with which to cover their cottages. The axes indicated that the Indians had obtained them from Europeans, as they had no such implements of their own make, and they were guided by these Indians to where the men were. On reaching the river, as they approached it from the Texas side, they were on the south

---

5.—Narrate the circumstances of his assassination and burial.

6.—Upon his death who took charge of the expedition? At what place did they finally arrive, and when?

7.—Upon coming near the place what did they meet? On reaching the river what did they discover? Narrate the incidents of their arrival? Whom did they find?

bank, and looking across to the north bank they discovered a large cross erected, and near it a house built in the French fashion; seeing which, they fell down on their knees, and with uplifted hands gave thanks to Heaven for having effected their deliverance. Presently they saw two men, clothed like themselves, coming out, who, on perceiving them, fired each a shot into the air as a salute.

On crossing the river they found that the two men were Frenchmen named Couture (*Koo-tur*) and De Launay (*Dch Lo-nay*), from Rouen (*Roo-en*), France, two of the party whom De Tonti had sent to establish the post, the other four having abandoned it and gone back to De Tonti in Illinois. This house or post they found was located near the Indian village called Ot-so-cho-ne.

**8. Ascending the Mississippi.** The party spent a few days visiting the other Indian villages near by, and on the 2d of August, 1687, embarked in the Mississippi in a canoe and began their journey up the stream to Fort St. Louis, which they reached September 1st. The party consisted of five Frenchmen and four Indians. Couture and De Launay remained behind, and with them a boy named Bartholomew, a Parisian, sixteen years of age, who had come with Joutel from Texas, and had stood the rigors of the journey, although he was "none the ablest of body." On taking leave of them, M. Cavalier, the brother of La Salle, whom all looked up to since the death of the great explorer, made an exhortation to Couture "to persevere and have patience in hope of the relief which would be sent him." They concealed the death of La Salle from the Indians for the purpose of keeping them in the belief that he would shortly come among them, as they looked upon him with awe.

**9. Reaching the Upper Country.** On reaching Fort St. Louis the party did not find De Tonti there; he was east in Cana-

---

8.—At what date did the party embark for the Upper Mississippi? Of how many did the party consist? Who remained behind? At what time did they reach the Fort St. Louis?

9.—Did they find De Tonti there? When did they return to France?



da; but on coming to the fort in the autumn of 1687 he found the party there awaiting him. They likewise concealed from De Tonti the fact of La Salle's death, and took their departure for Canada in the spring of 1688. On the 27th of July of that year they sailed from Canada for France, and reached Rouen, October 7th. They left De Tonti under the impression that La Salle was on the coast of Texas, alive and well; nor did he know differently until after they had gone; when, on the 7th of April, 1688, Cou-ture, coming from the Arkansas post, reached Fort St. Louis with two Arkansa Indians, and gave him the intelligence of La Salle's death.

**10.** De Tonti made many explorations up and down the Mississippi. In 1700 with twenty Canadians he descended from Rock Fort, Illinois, as far as Natchez, Mississippi, to meet Pierre Le Moyne, Sieur d'Iberville (*Pec-cr leh Moyn, sec'ur de-bair-veel*), the new commandant of Louisiana. After this date he never left the gulf region of Lower Louisiana, and died in Mobile in 1704.

**11. Iberville.** In 1698, Pierre Le Moyne, Sieur d'Iberville, obtained from Louis XIV a commission to establish direct intercourse between France and Louisiana, and in the autumn of that year began preparations to colonize the Province. He sailed from France, October 17th, 1698, with a fleet consisting of two frigates and two smaller vessels, having a company of marines and 200 settlers, one of whom was his younger brother, Jean Baptiste Le Moyne, Sieur de Bienville (*Zhean Bahtcest leh Moyn, sec'ur deh byahn-veel*), usually called Bienville. These le Moynes were two of eleven sons of Charles le Moyne, a citizen of Montreal,

Was De Tonti informed by them of La Salle's death? When and how did he hear of it?

**10.**—Give an account of the remainder of De Tonti's career.

**11.**—Who was next commissioned to establish direct intercourse between France and Louisiana? What did he do towards colonizing the Province?

who had emigrated from Normandy to Canada at an early date. All eleven of the sons became distinguished men.

**12. Sailing of the Expedition.** The expedition sailing from Brest, in France, October 24th, 1698, landed on Dauphin (*darv-in*) Island, on the Alabama coast, in January, 1699. A few huts were put up on Ship Island, and in May a fort was built on a sandy shore at the head of Biloxi Bay, the first fort built by the French and which was all that France had to vindicate her claim to the immense sweep of territory comprising the Province of Louisiana.

**13. Entering the Mississippi. De Tonti's Letter.** On the 27th of February, 1699, Iberville (*c-bair-veel*) set out with an expedition, including his younger brother Bienville, Father Anastase Douay, and forty-eight men, for the Mississippi, which they entered March 2d. They ascended as high as the mouth of Red River, and on the way halted awhile at the Bayagoula village. Here the chief of the tribe delivered to him the letter which De Tonti had left with them for the white man whom they should find ascending the river (meaning La Salle), who was expected to come by that way, but Iberville coming instead they delivered it to him. The letter contained the statement that De Tonti, the writer, had been to the mouth of the river to meet La Salle, and was greatly disappointed at not finding him; that he had sent searching parties to look for him, but which had returned unsuccessful; and that finding the column which La Salle had erected, with the arms of the king thereon, thrown down, he had caused a new one to be erected about seven leagues (twenty-one miles) from the sea. The letter had been safely preserved among the Indians with wonder and amazement for thirteen years.

---

**12.**—When and where did his expedition land? When and where did they build a fort?

**13.**—When and with whom did Iberville enter the Mississippi? How far did he ascend? Relate the incident of the letter of De Tonti to La Salle being delivered to him. To what did the letter relate? How long had it been safely kept by the Indians?

## CHAPTER IV.

*1700 to 1800—French and Spanish Governors.*

**1. Colonization.** Iberville was active in bringing colonists to settle the newly acquired region. He not only brought the colony of 200 in 1698, but again in 1701 he brought a second company, but so many perished from fevers that in 1702 only thirty French families remained in Louisiana. His own health was broken through this cause, and he was obliged to leave the country and retire to Havana to recuperate, at which place he died in the year 1706.

**2. Sauvolle, First Governor. Bienville.** In the year 1699, Sauvolle (*So-vul*), who had come to Louisiana under Iberville, was appointed Governor of the Province of Louisiana. He was the first colonial governor, and held the office until his death, which occurred July 22d, 1701. Upon his decease, Jean Baptiste Le Moyne, Sieur de Bienville, the younger brother of Iberville, succeeded him. Bienville was then only twenty-two years of age, but he held the office of governor for twenty-six years under three different appointments, to-wit: 1701 to 1712, 1718 to 1724, and 1733 to 1742.

**3. Crozat.** On his accession to the governorship in 1701 he governed the country for eleven years, or until 1712, when he was superseded by La Mothe Cadillac (*La-mote Kah-de-yak*), who had founded Detroit in 1701. Cadillac, however, did not long remain at the head of affairs, for, on the 14th of April, 1712, Louis XIV granted to Antoine Crozat (*An-twine Kru-zah*), a merchant, a monopoly of the entire Louisiana trade, and Cadillac became a sharer in the enterprise. Cadillac was succeeded in 1716 by de

---

CHAPTER IV.—1.—What efforts were made by Iberville to colonize Louisiana? What success attended his efforts?

2.—Who was the first Colonial Governor of Louisiana? Who succeeded him and how long did the successor govern the country?

3.—When did Cadillac become Governor? At what date did Crozat

L'Epinaÿ (*Dch-lep-ccu-ay*). and in 1718 De L'Epinaÿ was superseded by Bienville. On beginning his second term of office, Bienville, in 1718, founded the city of New Orleans on a site selected by him in 1717, and named it after the Duke of Orleans. It was made the temporary capital of the Province, it being intended that Natchez should be made the permanent capital. Bienville built a few huts in the midst of a canebrake, and an immigration company brought 800 emigrants to Louisiana, and settled a number of them at New Orleans; but after three years, by 1721, the settlement contained only 200 persons, most of whom camped in the canebrakes around the settlement.

4. **The Company of the West.** Crozat held his charter for five years, or until 1717, when he surrendered it to the Crown, and it was then transferred to a company with extensive powers called "the Company of the West" or "the Mississippi Company." John Law, a financier of ability of that time, was the organizer and a large supporter of the enterprises of this company. The company did much to promote the colonization of the country, but, after all, the increase of population from this source was but slow. In 1712 it was by enumeration only twenty-eight families in the whole Province, and in 1717 numbered only 700 persons all told. By 1730 it was scarcely more advanced than at the beginning.

5. **John Law's grant.** In 1718 John Law obtained a grant of lands four leagues (twelve miles) square, lying on the Arkansas River, near the Quapaw village, which he erected into a Duchy and appointed M. Levens (*Lay-vanns*) as trustee for it. He settled at it a colony which had been brought from Germany

---

obtain a grant of the trade of Louisiana? How long did he hold it? When did Bienville become Governor the second time? When did he found New Orleans? For whom was it named? What efforts were made to settle the place, and with what success?

4.—State the efforts of the "Company of the West" to colonize the Province, and what success they met with?

5.—Give the particulars of John Law's settlement on the Arkansas River?

and France by the Company of the West. In a short while Law's schemes failed, and upon his bankruptcy ensuing the settlement was broken up and abandoned. The German colonists at first settled eight leagues (twenty-four miles) higher up the river, but they broke up from there and descended the Mississippi to a short distance below New Orleans, where they settled on what is still called "the German Coast." Charlevoix (*Shar-le-vwah*), a French explorer, who saw the remains of Law's settlement on the Arkansas River in 1721, spoke of it as being in ruins.

**6. French Governors.** In 1724 Bienville was relieved of command, and during his absence Boisbriant (*Bwah-bre-ahnt*) was placed in command, which he held until 1726, when Perrier (*Pai-re-aigh*) was made Governor, and held the office until 1734, when Bienville was reappointed and came back to the colony with the rank of Lieutenant-General, and governed the colony until 1742. In 1730 a terrible massacre of the French was made by the Natchez and Yazoo tribes of Indians. In 1736 Bienville engaged in a war with the Chickasaws, in which he was worsted, and which was concluded in 1740 by his making peace with them. In 1742 he was recalled to France and never again returned to the colony. He died in France in 1768 at the age of eighty-eight years. At this date (1742) the white population of the Province of Louisiana is given as being about 5000. Maps of the English, French and Spanish possessions of about this date, published in 1745, show a place called the Post of Arkansas on the north bank of the Arkansas River, which corresponds very closely with the location of the present town of that name, and in old French maps of the year 1700 a post is shown as being at the place.

**7. Cession to Spain.** Upon Bienville being relieved of com-

---

**6.**—What changes took place in the French Governors from 1724 to 1742? What massacre of the French took place, and when? In what war did Bienville engage and its result? What was the white population of Louisiana at this time?

**7.**—What French Governors were there from 1742 to 1763? To what

mand in 1742 he was succeeded as Governor by Pierre de Rigaud, Marquis de Vaudr uil (*Pe-er deh Ree-go, Mar-quis deh Vo-drer-yeh*), who governed the country until 1752, when he was succeeded by the Baron de Kerlerec (*Ker-le-reck*), who held until 1762, when he was succeeded by D'Abbadie (*Deh-ab-ba-de*), who was in charge of affairs when the Spanish took possession of the country. D'Abbadie held until his death in 1765, when he was succeeded by Aubry. Aubry remained at the head of affairs from 1765 until 1768, governing jointly with Antonio de Ulloa, the Spanish appointee, because, although the country had been ceded to her by France in 1763, Spain did not take actual possession of it until 1768, five years later. This cession of the country to Spain took place in the Treaty of Paris. In 1756 war had arisen in Europe, participated in by England, France and Spain. It came to an end in 1763 by a treaty between the three countries made at Paris, and hence called the Treaty of Paris, of date February 10th, 1763. By its terms France ceded to Spain all of the Province of Louisiana lying west of the Mississippi River, and thus this country passed under Spain's dominion after having been in the possession of France for eighty-one years.

**8. Spanish Governors.** The country remained in Spanish possession for thirty-seven years, or until 1800, when it was ceded back to France. Upon its passing to the Spaniards, Antonio de Ulloa (*An-to-ne-o deh Oo-lyo-ah*) was appointed Governor in 1766, but after having taken possession of the country was expelled by the French Colonists in the month of October, 1768. Upon his expulsion, Count Alexander O'Reilly (*O-ri-ley*) was sent in 1768 with a fleet to take possession of the country. In doing so he dealt very harshly with the colonists who had expelled Ulloa, and

---

country was the Province of Louisiana ceded in 1763, and in what treaty? How long had the country been in French possession?

**8.**—How long did the country remain in Spanish possession? Until what date? What Governors were there?

caused many of them to be put to death. In 1770 O'Reilly was succeeded by Louis de Unzaga (*Loo-cy deh Oon-thah-gah*), who was Governor till 1777, and he by Bernardo de Galvez (*Bair-nar-do deh Gal-vaith*), from 1777 to 1784. This was the period of the American Revolution, and in it De Galvez gave great and important aid to the Americans. Then came Estevan Miro (*Mee-ro*), from 1784 to 1791; Francisco Louis Hector, Baron de Carondelet (*Cah-ron-de-lay*), 1791 to 1797; Manuel Gayoso de Lemos (*Man-u-el Gah-yo-so deh Lay-mos*), 1797 to 1799; next, Sebastian de Casa Calvo, from 1799 until June, 1801, when he was succeeded by Don Juan Manuel de Salcedo (*Don Hwan Man-u-el deh Sal-the-do*), who was in charge when the country passed back into the actual possession of France in 1803.

**9. Grants of Lands.** During the governorship of the Baron de Carondelet he made many grants of lands in Arkansas, some of which proved to be valid and effectual, and persons at this date hold perfect titles under them, but others of them became invalid for indefiniteness or from the failure of the grantees to perfect them. Among the largest of these was one made in 1793 to Captain Don Joseph Valliere, of land lying on White River, thirty miles on both banks. This grant was invalidated by the courts in 1847 on a suit by his heirs to recover it.

Another grant was made in 1799 to the Baron de Bastrop (*Bahs-tro*) of one million arpens of land lying on the Ouachita River, a portion being in Arkansas. De Bastrop, who was a Prussian, and hated the French, on finding that the country had been ceded to France, moved into Texas and became a citizen of San Antonio, where he died in 1829. An arpen is a Spanish measure of land about eighty-five hundredths of an acre.

A third grant made in 1795 was to Don Carlos de Villemont,

**9.**—Give particulars of some of the larger grants of land made by the Baron de Carondelet: to Don Joseph Valliere; to the Baron de Bastrop; to Don Carlos de Villemont, and to the Winter families.

who was the Spanish commandant at Arkansas Post from 1793 to 1803, of 14,000 arpens of land lying on the Mississippi River at what was called "Chicot Island." This grant was invalidated by the courts for indefiniteness in 1848 on a suit by the heirs to recover it. After the transfer of Louisiana to the United States, Don Carlos de Villemont became a citizen of the United States, and lived in St. Louis as late as 1813.

**10. Grant to the Winter Families.** Another grant made by the Baron de Carondelet was of date 1797 to Elisha Winter, William Winter, Gabriel Winter, William Russell and Joseph Stillwell, of one million arpens of land located near the Post of Arkansas. The Winter families and Stillwell moved on their lands in 1798. They made extensive improvements, erected permanent buildings, brought cattle and sheep and other live stock, the first that were brought there. This grant was also invalidated by the courts in 1848 for indefiniteness in location and description.

**11. Census Taken.** In 1798 Governor de Lemos caused a census of the inhabitants to be taken, which was completed in 1799. In it the population of the District of Arkansas was put down at 368 persons. At that time the District or "Command" of Arkansas, as it was called, embraced more than the present State of Arkansas. It extended from New Madrid along the Mississippi down to Point Coupée (*Coo-pay*), in Louisiana, and far west into the Indian Territory. Don Carlos de Villemont was in command of it, having his headquarters at the Post of Arkansas.

**12. Retrocession to France.** In the year 1800 Napoleon Bonaparte, who had become the conqueror of Europe, concluded

---

10.—What census of the inhabitants of Louisiana was made in 1798, and by whom? What was the white population of the District or Command of Arkansas? What was its extent and who was in command of it?

12.—To what country was the Province of Louisiana ceded in 1800 and in what treaty? Why was this made a secret treaty?



a treaty with the King of Spain, called the Treaty of St. Ildefonso (*Saint Ecl-da-fon-zo*), in which Spain ceded back to France all of the Province of Louisiana lying west of the Mississippi River, which they had received from France, and with the same extent that it had when they received it. The making of this treaty was kept a secret—so much so that it was not generally known that France owned the country until 1802, or two years after it was made. The reason of this was that France and England were on hostile terms and seemed to be on the eve of engaging in a war, and the French were afraid that if the English knew of their owning Louisiana, they (the English) would take it away from them. The French did not even appoint any French Governor for the country, but left it in charge of the last Spanish Governor, the Marquis de Casa Calvo.

**13. Settlement of Upper Louisiana.** During this time settlement of the upper portion of the Province of Louisiana was taking place. As early as 1720 the mines and minerals there, the existence of which had been noted on early maps, had begun to attract attention. In 1755 the town of St. Genevieve (*Saint Zhen-a-vayve*), the first and oldest town in what is now the State of Missouri, was founded. By 1775 its population was about 800 persons. In February, 1764, the town of St. Louis, which was originally a depot for the fur trade, was founded and settled by a company under Pierre Liguette Laclède (*Pe-cer Lig-gwest Laah-clade*), and by 1775 contained about the same number. About the time of its settlement, or shortly before, another settlement was made in the same neighborhood, named Carondelet, after the Baron de Carondelet, situated a few miles south of St. Louis on the same side of the river, and nicknamed *Vide Poche* (*veed-poash*), meaning “empty pocket.” It was thought that this set-

---

**13.**—What settlement of the upper part of the Province was being made during the progress of these events? Name some places which were settled and the progress of their growth.

tlement would prove to be a larger town than St. Louis, but the growth of the great city has been such as to entirely absorb Carondelet, which no longer maintains a separate existence as a city.

## CHAPTER V.

### *1800 to 1803 — The Louisiana Purchase.*

**1. Trouble with Spain.** As soon as it became known that France owned the country (which was in 1802), Thomas Jefferson, who was at that time President of the United States, conceived the project of purchasing from her the city of New Orleans as a port of entry and deposit for American merchandise being shipped down the Mississippi River. Certain recent events had made such a purchase a necessity. As long as any foreign power owned the country on the west bank of the river there was constant trouble over the subject of the joint navigation of the stream. All during the Spanish occupation there had been trouble over the subject, which, however, had been partly allayed by a treaty between the two nations, by which it was agreed that the Americans should be allowed to use the city of New Orleans as a port of deposit for their merchandise for three years, or, if the privilege was at any time withdrawn, then that some other port should be designated for the purpose.

**2. Closing the Port of New Orleans.** Under this treaty matters went along somewhat smoothly until 1802, when Don Morales (*Mo-rah-laze*), the Spanish Intendant of Louisiana, issued his proclamation prohibiting the further use of the port of New Orleans by the Americans, but not designating any other place for the purpose. This produced a great storm, and for a while it looked like serious trouble would arise out of it; but after a protest being made by Congress and by various State Legislatures the proclamation was countermanded and the former relations were restored.

---

CHAPTER V. 1-2.—What circumstances led to President Jefferson's efforts to purchase the city of New Orleans from France?

**3. Proposals of Purchase.** This circumstance determined Mr. Jefferson to purchase a suitable port on the river for American merchandise, and he accordingly instructed the American minister at Paris, Robert R. Livingston, to open negotiations with Napoleon Bonaparte, who was then at the head of the French Republic, under the title of First Consul, for the purchase of the city of New Orleans and the so-called island on which it is situated; together with the Peninsula of Florida.

**4. Negotiations.** Mr. Livingston made proposals for the purchase of these, but Bonaparte was averse to selling. He had a different project in view. His intention was to occupy the country as a colony of France, and appoint Bernadotte who afterwards became King of Sweden, Governor of the country. His plans were so far matured that the French fleet, which was lying at the Island of San Domingo, had orders to be ready to sail at any day; the troops designed for the expedition were under marching orders, and the necessary stores were being moved aboard. Mr. Livingston reported this to President Jefferson, who, with the consent of Congress, appointed James Monroe of Virginia, afterwards President, to go to France, as "Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary," to assist Mr. Livingston in the negotiations. Mr. Monroe set sail for France, and arrived at Paris, April 12th, 1803.

**5. France Agrees to Sell.** In the meantime, while Mr. Monroe was making his voyage, a complete change took place in Bonaparte's plans. War with England was becoming more imminent every day. The English papers having now learned that France was the owner of Louisiana, were clamorous that England should seize the country, and it was rumored that a large

---

3.—In what manner did he begin the matter of negotiations?

4.—How were the proposals at first received? What were Bonaparte's plans with reference to the Province? Who was sent to France to aid the negotiations?

5.—From what circumstances did a change in Bonaparte's plans arise?

English fleet was on the way for the purpose. In this critical juncture of affairs, Talleyrand, one of the ablest French ministers, advised Bonaparte to sell the country to the United States before the design of the English could be consummated. Accordingly summoning his minister of Finance, Francis Barbé Marbois (*Barbay Mar-bwah*), Bonaparte directed him to sell the country to the Americans if he could get 50,000,000 francs for it.

**6. Conclusion of the Transaction.** Marbois at once opened negotiations with Mr. Livingston on the subject, and the timely arrival of Mr. Monroe enabled the commissioners to proceed without interruption. The Americans had been directed to purchase only the city of New Orleans, but Bonaparte said he would not sell anything less than the whole country. Marbois thinking the price which Bonaparte had named was too low, on his own motion fixed the price at 80,000,000 francs for the whole country. The American commissioners then proposed that 20,000,000 francs should be taken off and applied by the United States to the claims which American citizens had against France for spoliation of then commerce in a recent season of unpleasantness between the two countries, leaving 60,000,000 francs to be paid to France. To this Marbois assented, and so the stupendous transaction was concluded. The United States agreed to create a stock of \$11,250,000 in bonds, equivalent to 60,000,000 francs, the first instalment of \$3,000,000 to be paid at the Treasury of the United States in fifteen years, and \$3,000,000 annually thereafter until all should be paid, with interest at six per cent. per annum, payable semi annually. The interest amounted to \$675,000 a year. The amount of principal and interest was fully paid to France, but the amount due to American citizens on spoliation

---

Whom did he appoint to negotiate for him? For how much did Bonaparte direct the country to be sold?

**6.**—Give the incidents of the negotiation. What was the amount to be paid to France, and what on spoliation claims? Have the agreed amounts

claims has never yet been paid. Histories usually state that the United States paid France \$15,000,000 for Louisiana. That is a mistake. They paid France 60,000,000 francs, or \$11,250,000 of principal, with six per cent. interest thereon to maturity, and engaged to pay to American citizens the sum of 20,000,000 francs, or \$3,750,000, making total to be paid by them 80,000,000 francs, equivalent to \$15,000,000; but while the amount due to France was paid to her, the amount assumed to be paid to American citizens, part of the \$15,000,000, has never yet been paid.\*

7. **General Rejoicing Over the Matter.** Upon the consummation of the treaty, Napoleon signed it at once without waiting for the reciprocal signature of commissioners on the part of the United States, and having thus put the title of the country entirely in the United States, as far as France was concerned, he declared war against England that very day, and at once began hostilities.

**\*The Amount Paid.** The exact amount paid to *France* by the United States for the Louisiana purchase can be ascertained by the following sum:

The amount in 1803 .. .. .	\$11,250,000 00	
Interest at 6 per cent. to 1818, 15 years, at \$675,000 per annum, which was paid each year of that time .. .. .		\$10,125,000 00
Paid on principal, 1818 .. .. .	3,000,000 00	
Balance of principal due .. .. .	8,250,000 00	
Interest thereon to 1819, 1 year, paid .. .. .		495,000 00
Paid on principal, 1819 .. .. .	3,000,000 00	
Balance of principal due .. .. .	5,250,000 00	
Interest thereon to 1820, 1 year, paid .. .. .		315,000 00
Paid on principal, 1820 .. .. .	3,000,000 00	
Balance of principal due .. .. .	2,250,000 00	
Interest thereon to 1821, 1 year, paid .. .. .		135,000 00
Principal paid, 1821 .. .. .	2,250,000 00	
Total interest paid .. .. .		11,070,000 00
Amount of principal paid .. .. .		11,250,000 00
		<u>\$22,320,000 00</u>

Total of principal and interest paid, twenty-two million three hundred and twenty thousand dollars.

been paid? What misstatement as to the price paid to France is usually made?

7.—What act of Bonaparte followed the making of the cession?

Everybody was pleased at the result of the purchase. The English were pleased because they had frustrated Bonaparte's designs to that extent; he was pleased for similar reasons with relation to them, and because he had aided in creating a formidable rival to England; and the Americans were pleased because they had acquired so vast a territory, an empire in itself. Mr. Monroe always regarded the part he took in effecting the Louisiana purchase as the greatest achievement of his life; and when the negotiations were concluded Mr. Livingston said: "We have lived long, but this is the noblest work of our whole lives. It will change vast solitudes into flourishing districts. From this day the United States take their place among the powers of the first rank." It was a noble prophecy, and it has been nobly fulfilled.

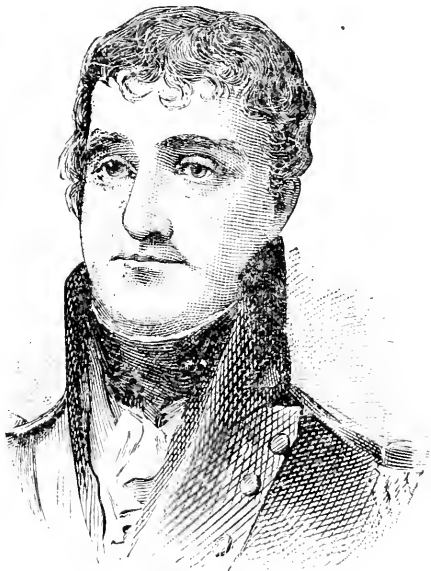
**8. Extent of the Cession.** It was the largest cession of country ever made by one nation to another. It embraced country which extended from the Gulf of Mexico on the south to the British possessions on the north; from the Mississippi River on the east to the Pacific Ocean on the west, at least above Texas. The Americans claimed that Texas itself was included in the purchase, and made their claim the basis on which they ceded Texas to Spain in 1819. Leaving out Texas, it comprised 1,182,745 square miles, or 756,956,800 acres. From it the States of Louisiana, Arkansas, Missouri, Iowa, Nebraska, Kansas, Minnesota, Colorado, North Dakota, South Dakota, Montana and Washington, and the Territories of Idaho, Wyoming and Indian Territory, in whole or in part, were formed, besides adding parts to the States of Alabama and Mississippi. Without the possession of this immense region the United States never could have risen to the high pitch of grandeur they have attained.

---

How was the treaty received?

**8.**—What was the extent of the cession geographically? What in square miles and acres? What States and Territories have been formed from it in whole or in part?

**9. Obtaining Possession.** Upon the ratification of the treaty by the United States Mr. Jefferson took measures to obtain actual possession of the country. He appointed Governor William C. Claiborne, a distinguished lawyer and statesman, at the time Governor of Mississippi Territory, and General James Wilkinson, a Brigadier-General in the United States Army, as commissioners to receive the country from France, and Bonaparte appointed Citizen Pierre Clement Laussat (*Lo-zah*) to receive it from Spain, and then deliver it to the United States. On the 30th of November, 1803, the Spanish Intendant, the Marquis de Casa Calvo, as the commissioner of Spain, with Governor de Salcedo, delivered possession of the country to Citizen Laussat, as the representative of France, and on the 20th of December, 1803, Citizen Laussat met the American commissioners in conference at the City Hall in New Orleans, and there formally delivered to them the country. After the ceremonies of the official delivery had taken place the transfer of sovereignty was symbolized by hoisting the American flag, and the transfer was concluded. Mr. Jefferson appointed Governor Claiborne Governor



WILLIAM C. C. CLAIBORNE,  
FIRST AMERICAN GOVERNOR, PROVINCE OF LOUISIANA

of the Province, and on assuming the duties of his office he issued a patriotic address, in which he assured the people that all their rights of property and personal liberty should be faithfully secured to them, and their religious beliefs respected. Governor Claiborne was therefore the FIRST AMERICAN to serve as GOVERNOR over the country out of which the State of Arkansas was afterwards formed, and Thomas Jefferson was the first President under whom the people of that country had an existence as part of the United States. Mr. Jefferson was anxious to have James Monroe Governor of the Province, but he preferred to remain Minister to England. He then tendered the appointment to La Fayette, but he declined, being unwilling to leave France. Mr. Jefferson then appointed Governor Claiborne.

10. **Transfer of Sovereignty in Upper Louisiana.** The transfer of sovereignty in the upper part of the Province was signalized at St. Louis, March 10th, 1804, by the lowering of the French ensign, and the hoisting of an American flag from the balcony of the residence of Charles Gratiot, who, in the presence of a large crowd of people, saluted with respect the emblem of the new nationality to which they were transferred. St. Louis at that time contained a population of about one thousand souls, with but few English-speaking families. It had not a brick house or a brick chimney in it anywhere. It had only three streets, one hundred and fifty houses and one log church. It was as thoroughly French in manners and customs as any provincial town of France to-day.

---

possession? At what date was it formally delivered to them? Who was the first American Governor?

10.—By what incident was the transfer of sovereignty in the upper part of the Province symbolized? Where and at what date did it take place? What was the population and extent of St. Louis at that time?



## REVIEW QUESTIONS.

## (PERIOD I.)

GENERAL.—What length of time is embraced in this Period? From what date to what date? With what incident does it terminate?

CHAPTER I. 1.—From whom did the United States obtain the territory of which the present State of Arkansas consists? How did France acquire it?

2.—What is the present area of the State in square miles and acres, and what was the population in the tenth census, the one of 1880?

3.—What people at first occupied the country?

4.—Of what tribes were they, and where were the tribes located?

5.—How and when did the United States obtain the lands from them? What reservation was made in one of their treaties, and when?

6.—At what date did the tribe cede this reservation, and what was their subsequent history?

7.—From what does the State take its name?

8.—How was their name called by early writers?

9.—How was it spelled by them? How in early laws and official documents? Give an instance. What declaration has the State Legislature made on the subject of pronunciation of the name?

10.—What common error exists as to the meaning of the name?

CHAPTER II. 1.—Who was the first white person to traverse the country which is now Arkansas, and at what date did he come?

2.—In what direction and to what points did he journey?

3.—What celebrated place did he discover in his wanderings? Where did he pass the winter?

4.—What of his farther journey?

5.—Who were the next explorers to come, and at what date? How far did they explore? How long a period was this after the previous explorer? What is the earliest map of the country made?

6.—Who is said to have been the next explorer, and how far did he explore?

7.—Who was the next explorer, and how far did he explore? At what date was this?

8.—Of what did he claim possession? What name did he give to it, and for whom? What name did they give the river, and for whom?

9.—At what date did he return to France? Who was left in command? What search did he make for his chief?

10.—What and where and by whom was the first white settlement made in Arkansas?

CHAPTER III. 1.—How was La Salle received on his return to France, and what assistance did he receive?

2.—When and from whence did the fleet sail, and where did it land?

3.—How were the ships lost?

4.—How did the explorers endeavor to maintain themselves, and with what success?

5.—What of their journey and La Salle's death?

6.—Who commanded the expedition after La Salle, and at what point did he arrive and when?

7.—Whom did they find there, and how did they discover them?

8.—When did they take their departure for the upper Mississippi?

9.—When and where did they find De Tonti?

10.—What of De Tonti's expeditions?

11.—Who next came in command of the country, and when?

12.—When and where did the fleet land? What habitations were built? What fort?

13.—When did they enter the Mississippi River? Relate the incident of the letter delivered by the Indians.

CHAPTER IV. 1.—What efforts did Iberville make to colonize the province, and with what success?

2.—Who was the first Colonial Governor? Who the next, and how long was he in office?

3.—What successions of governors from 1701 to 1724?

4.—What efforts were made by the "Company of the West" to induce immigration?

5.—What of John Law's colony?

6.—What successions of governors from 1724 to 1742? What was the white population of the province in 1742-1745?

7.—What successions of governors to 1763? To what nation was the country ceded in that year, and in what treaty?

8.—Give the succession of Spanish governors from 1763 to 1800?

9-10.—Mention certain grants of lands made by the Baron de Carondelet and their subsequent history?

11.—What was the population and extent of the district of Arkansas in 1798-1799? Who was in command?

12.—In what treaty and at what date did France recover the country?

13.—What settlement of the upper part of the Province was being made?

CHAPTER V.—1-2-3.—Why were efforts made to purchase the city of New Orleans, and by whose direction?

4.—How were the proposals received at first? What were Bonaparte's plans as to the Province?

5.—What change took place in the plans, and why?

6.—What negotiations took place? What was the agreed price? How much was to be paid to France, and at what times? How much was to be paid to American citizens for spoliation claims, and what was the full amount paid to France? What misstatement is usually made concerning the amount paid?

7.—How was the treaty received?

8.—What was the geographical extent of the cession? What the area by square miles and acres? What States and Territories have been formed from it in whole or in part?

9.—Relate the incidents of the United States taking formal possession at New Orleans? Who was the first American Governor of the Province?

10.—How was the transfer of sovereignty in the upper part of the Province symbolized, and where and when?

## II.—THE ANTE-TERRITORIAL PERIOD.

EXTENDING FROM 1803, WHEN THE COUNTRY BECAME THE PROPERTY OF THE UNITED STATES, TO 1819, WHEN THE TERRITORY OF ARKANSAS WAS FORMED.

---

### CHAPTER VI.

1803 to 1813—*Missouri Territory.*

1. **Territories.** **District of Louisiana.** In the next year after the purchase of Louisiana—to-wit: on the 26th of March, 1804—Congress created two Territories out of the country which had been ceded by France, the lower one called the Territory of Orleans, extending from the Gulf of Mexico northward as far as the thirty-third degree of north latitude, which is the present northern boundary line of the State of Louisiana, or dividing line between Louisiana and Arkansas, with the seat of government located at New Orleans. All the remainder of the Province was organized into a Territory called the District of Louisiana, or, as it was commonly called, Upper Louisiana: with the seat of government at St. Louis. The executive power was vested in the Governor and judges of Indiana Territory. In the autumn of 1804 General William Henry Harrison, who was Governor of Indiana Territory, afterwards President of the United States, visited St. Louis and organized courts for the District.

2. **Territory of Louisiana.** In the following Spring, to-wit: March 3d, 1805, Congress organized the *Territory* of Louisiana, being what had previously been the *District* of Louisiana. Pres-

---

CHAPTER VI. 1.—What Territories were created out of the country ceded by France? Under whose government was the upper Territory placed?

2.—What Territory was organized the next year? Who was appointed

ident Jefferson appointed General James Wilkinson, who had been one of the commissioners to receive the country from France, Governor of the Territory; with Frederick Bates as secretary, and Judges R. J. Meigs and John B. C. Lucas as Judges of the Superior Court.

**3. District of "Arkansaw."** In the organization of the Territory of Louisiana all of the present State of Arkansas, together with the lower part of the present State of Missouri, was laid off into a district called the District of New Madrid. By an act of the Legislature of the Territory of Louisiana, of date June 27th, 1806, the lower part of this District of New Madrid, being about two-thirds of the present State of Arkansas, was laid off into a new district called the "District of Arkansaw;" spelled s-a-w.

**4. Explorations.** As soon as the vast and unknown region embraced in the Louisiana purchase had been acquired from France, explorations into it began to be made. In 1803 Captain Merriwether Lewis, of Charlottesville, Virginia, who had been private secretary to President Jefferson, together with Captain William Clarke, commanded an expedition which set out in 1803, and was gone two years and four months, reaching the Pacific Coast and returning in 1806. Their explorations were commenced higher up than the present State of Arkansas. In 1806 Lieutenant Zebulon Montgomery Pike, an officer of the United States Army, conducted an exploration into the Louisiana country and Mexico. When on the upper waters of the Arkansas River he detached Lieutenant James B. Wilkinson of his party, to make a descent of the Arkansas River. Lieutenant Wilkinson, with Sergeant Ballenger and two men in two canoes, made the journey down the river from October 27th, 1806, reaching the Post of Arkansas, January 9th,

---

Governor? Who Secretary, and who Judges?

**3.**—What comprised the District of New Madrid? What "the District of Arkansaw"?

**4.**—What explorations were made in the new region, and when? Who

1807. This was the first official exploration of the Arkansas River made after the Louisiana purchase. Lieutenant Wilkinson made a map of the river, the date being 1807. It shows the Hot Springs, somewhat near the river; a few French hunters camped along the banks; Quapaw and Choctaw villages near the Post of Arkansas, but no white settlement on the entire river, except at the Post.

5. **Merriwether Lewis, Governor. Osage Treaty.** In 1807 General Wilkinson was succeeded as Governor by Captain Merriwether Lewis, who had commanded the famous exploring expedition. Captain Lewis served as Governor until 1809, when he met his death at Nashville, Tennessee, while on a journey eastward. It was during the administration of Governor Lewis that the first treaty was made with the Osage Indians, of date, November 10th, 1808, by which a large quantity of land lying in the present State of Arkansas was ceded to the United States. The boundaries of the cession extended from the Arkansas River northward to the Missouri River, eastward to the Mississippi, and westward to a line due south from Fort Clark on the Missouri River, striking the Arkansas River at Frog Bayou, in what is now Crawford County. The entire quantity of land ceded in this treaty was something over 48,000,000 acres, of which 14,830,432 acres lay in the present State of Arkansas; being from the Arkansas River north to the State line, and from the Mississippi River on the east to a south line, striking the Arkansas River at Frog Bayou, on the west.\*

6. **Benjamin A. Howard, Governor.** In 1809, on the death of Governor Lewis, General Benjamin A. Howard of Lexington,

---

\*See map, page 10.

---

first explored the Arkansas River, and when? What is shown on his map?

5.—Who succeeded General James Wilkinson as Governor, and when? What treaty was made during his administration? What number of acres in Arkansas was ceded by this treaty?

6.—Who was next appointed Governor, and when? Who afterwards, and

Kentucky, was appointed Governor of the Territory of Louisiana, and served as such until October 31st, 1812, when, war having arisen with Great Britain, he resigned his commission as Governor and accepted a brigadier-generalship in the American Army. He was succeeded at that date by Captain William Clark, who remained as Governor from that date until 1820; but Frederick Bates, Secretary of the Territory, served as acting Governor in the year 1818, and as such acted on several laws relating to Arkansas. In 1810 the population of Arkansas was 1062 persons.

**7. The New Madrid Earthquake.** In 1811 a great earthquake occurred at New Madrid, in the Territory of Louisiana, which reached into the upper regions of the present State of Arkansas. It extended for the distance of three hundred miles southward along the Mississippi River from the mouth of the Ohio River. Humboldt, speaking of it, remarks that it presents one of the few examples of incessant quaking of the ground far away from any volcano. The ground rose and sunk in great undulations, and lakes were alternately formed and drained again. The surface burst open in great fissures, which extended northeast and southwest, and were sometimes more than half a mile long, and from these fissures mud and water were thrown as high as the tops of trees. In the Mississippi River, islands disappeared, and the channel was changed many times. The disturbances continued until March 26th, 1812, when they ceased. In Craighead County, Arkansas, and adjacent counties, there are portions of the country called "The Sunk Lands," which were submerged by this earthquake in February, 1812. The St. Francis River altered its course and followed the lowest places, leaving its former bed dry, and lakes formed in places where it used to run. In order to recompense people who had lost lands in this earthquake the Government

---

how long did he serve? What was the population of Arkansas in 1810?

**7.**—Give the particulars of the New Madrid earthquake. At what date did it take place? What part of Arkansas was affected by it? How

passed a law in 1815 which allowed them to select an amount of land not exceeding one hundred and sixty acres, and locate their selections on any of the unoccupied Government lands in the Territory. Several of these locations, called New Madrid certificates, were located in Arkansas, the most noted of which was one located at Hot Springs, and another located at Little Rock; the latter embracing land comprising a part of that on which the city of Little Rock is built.

**8. Missouri Territory.** On the 8th of April, 1812, the Territory of Orleans was admitted into the Union as a State, under the name of the State of Louisiana, and on the 4th of June, 1812, Congress provided that the Territory previously called the District of Louisiana should thereafter be called Missouri Territory. The name is derived from a tribe of the Dakota family, which Marquette in his account of his explorations of 1673, spoke of as the first tribe living along the banks of the river which bears their name after leaving the Mississippi. Their real name was Nu-dar-cha (*Nev-dar'-kah*), but the name Missouri had been given them by the Illinois tribes, from whom Marquette learned of them. The name in the Indian tongue means "muddy water," and refers to their river, of which Joutel says "the waters are always thick."

**9. Organization.** The act of Congress creating the Territory provided that the legislative power should be vested in a general assembly, consisting of a Governor, a Legislative Council of nine members, and a House of Representatives of thirteen members. The seat of government was directed to be at St. Louis, and the Governor was directed to divide the State into convenient election districts for the election of the delegates to the Legislature.

---

were people who lost lands recompensed? Name some instances of location of certificates.

**8**—At what date was the Territory of Missouri formed? From whence is the name derived? What does it mean?

**9**.—In what was the legislative power of the new territory vested? Where



On the 1st of October, 1812, Governor Benjamin A. Howard, as Governor of the Territory, issued his proclamation, announcing that the new Territory of Missouri would be in operation on the 1st day of December, 1812; providing for an election of the delegates, designating Arkansas Post to be the seat of justice of a district comprising the greater part of the present State of Arkansas, and providing for the election of a delegate to Congress. At this last named election, Edward Hempstead, who was born in New London, Connecticut, June 3d, 1780, was elected delegate. He took his seat in Congress, January 4th, 1813, and served until November 13th, 1814. He was the first delegate to Congress from Missouri Territory, and represented all the country west of the Mississippi River except the State of Louisiana. He was Speaker of the House of Representatives of Missouri Territory of 1816, and died in 1817. He was succeeded as delegate to Congress by Rufus Easton in 1814, and he by John Scott in 1816 to 1820.

## CHAPTER VII.

### *1813 to 1819—Arkansas Territory Formed.*

1. **Arkansas County.** On the 31st of December, 1813, the Legislature of Missouri Territory formed the county of New Madrid out of the southeastern part of the present State of Missouri, and the northeastern part of the present State of Arkansas, and at the same date, December 31st, 1813, formed the county of Arkansas, embracing the remainder of the State. The county of Arkansas was the eighth county formed in the Territory of Missouri, and is the first county formed of those now comprising the State of Arkansas. The seat of justice was directed to be "at

---

was the seat of government? What did Governor Howard's proclamation set forth? Who was the first delegate to Congress from the territory? Who succeeded him? And who next?

CHAPTER VII.—1.—At what date was the county of New Madrid formed? At what date the county of Arkansas? What was made the seat of justice

the village of Arkansaw." This is the name by which the Post of Arkansas was known on the Government records. The Post remained the county seat until 1855, when the seat of justice was moved to De Witt, where it now is.

**2. Arkansas Post.** The Post of Arkansas, was, as we have seen, shown as a Post on maps of the year 1700, and on maps of 1745, and probably began as such in the settlement made by De Tonti's men, as shown on Joutel's map of 1695. The county records run back to the year 1760, and the town is believed to have been actively settled shortly after the Spanish occupation, which took place in 1768, the treaty of cession having been made five years previously. The records of the Catholic church there run back to 1772. Among them are records of burials performed, in the absence of any Priest, by Captain Don Joseph Valliere, of dates from 1786 to 1790. Don Joseph Valliere has been mentioned as one to whom a large grant of land was made by the Baron de Carondelet (*Cah-ron'-da-lay*). Don Carlos de Villemont was the Commandant there from 1793 to 1803. In 1798 the Winter families and Joseph Stillwell settled there, as has been stated. The first Protestant sermon preached in Arkansas was preached there by Reverend John P. Carnahan of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church in 1811.

**3. Postoffice.** On the 1st of July, 1817, a postoffice was established there under the name of Arkansas, Missouri Territory, and Eli J. Lewis was appointed postmaster. It remained under this name until after 1819, when the name became Arkansas, Arkansas Territory, and continued under this name on the Department

of the latter? How long did it remain such? What is now the county seat?

**2.**—At what date is the Post of Arkansas thought to have been settled? To what dates are there records? Mention persons who were there at early dates? At what date was the first Protestant sermon preached in Arkansas, and by whom?

**3.**—At what date and under what name was there a postoffice established

records until December 27th, 1831, when the name of the post-office was changed to Arkansas Post, Arkansas Territory.

**4. Lawrence County.** On the 15th of January, 1815, the Legislature of Missouri Territory formed the county of Lawrence out of the lower part of New Madrid County, in the northeast part of the present State. It was the second county formed in what is now the State of Arkansas, and received its name from that naval hero of the war of 1812, Captain James Lawrence, who commanded the Chesapeake in her engagement with the Shannon, June 1st, 1813, and whose last words, as he was being borne below mortally wounded, were, "Don't give up the ship." The town of Davidsonville, which was founded in the year 1815, became the county seat of the county, and so remained until 1829, when the seat of justice was moved to a place called Jackson, from which place it was moved to Smithville about 1832. It was moved from there to Clover Bend in 1868, and in 1869 from there to Powhatan, where it now is. On the 28th of June, 1817, a post-office was established at Davidsonville, and Adam Ritchey was appointed postmaster. This was the FIRST POSTOFFICE established in Arkansas. The one at Arkansas Post was established four days later. At that time there was only one mail-route in all of Arkansas. It was from St. Louis through Davidsonville, and the Post of Arkansas to Monroe Courthouse, Louisiana. Mail was carried on horseback, and was delivered between these points once in thirty days.

**5. First Treaty with the Quapaws.** On the 24th of August, 1818, occurred the first treaty with the Quapaw Indians, by which

---

at Arkansas Post?

**4.**—At what date was the county of Lawrence formed? Out of what county formed? Who was it named for? What was made the county seat? What other county seats has the county had, and the dates thereof? At what date was a postoffice established at Davidsonville? Was this the first postoffice in Arkansas? What was the only mail route in Arkansas at the time?

**5.**—When did the first Quapaw treaty occur? What did they reserve?

a large quantity of land, estimated at 16,000,000 acres, was ceded by them to the United States. They reserved a portion of about 1,500,000 acres in the centre, bounded east by a line from the river, opposite Arkansas Post, southwesterly to the Ouachita River, and west by a line running north from the Saline River to the Arkansas, terminating at the "Point of Rocks" on the Arkansas River.\* The chiefs of the tribe, with whom the treaty was negotiated, were Heckaton, "The Dry Man," Irad-a-pa-ah, "The Eagle's Bill," Te-hon-ka (*Te-hong'-kah*). "The Tame Buffalo," and others. In 1817 a treaty was made between the United States and the Cherokee Indians, who lived east of the Mississippi River, by which they were moved to Arkansas and settled north of the Arkansas River, between White River and a line running northeast from Point Remove in Conway County "to Chataunga (*Chat-ta-ung'-gah*) Mountain, or the hill first above Shield's Ferry" on White River, a point a little above Batesville. They were 5000 in number. They remained here until 1828, when by another treaty they were moved to the Indian Territory, where they now are.\*

6. **Counties of Pulaski, Clark and Hempstead.** On the 15th of December, 1818, the Legislature of Missouri Territory created the counties of Pulaski, Clark and Hempstead, all of which were formed out of portions of Arkansas County. They were immense counties in size, and from them many counties have since been formed. Pulaski County was named after Count Pulaski, the Polish Patriot; Clark, after Governor William Clark, who was at that time Governor of Missouri Territory, and Hempstead County was named after Edward Hempstead, the first delegate to Congress from Missouri Territory.

---

\*See map, page 10.

---

Give the names of chiefs of the tribe making the treaty. What is said of the location of the Cherokee Indians in Arkansas?

6.—When were the counties of Pulaski, Clark and Hempstead formed, and for whom were they named?

7. **Pulaski County**, the third county to be formed, to count them in the order in which they were mentioned in the laws, is an interior county, near the centre of the State, and in it the State capital is situated. At the time of its formation there was no town in it which could serve as the county seat, so the courts were directed to be held at the house of Samuel McHenry. In 1820 the Territorial Legislature established the county seat at a place called the Cadron, then in Pulaski, but now in Faulkner County, where a settlement had been begun in 1818; but in 1821, after the Territorial capital had been moved from the Post of Arkansas to Little Rock, the county seat was moved to Little Rock also, and has since remained there.

8. **The City of Little Rock**, the Capital and chief city of the State, is situated on the south side of the Arkansas River in Pulaski County, and takes its name from the "Point of Rocks," which forms one of the abutments of the lower bridge in the eastern part of the city. From very early times this point was called "the Little Rock," or "the Little Rocks," to distinguish it from "the Big Rock," a precipitous cliff, three miles higher up the river. This "Point of Rocks," or "Little Rock," is the first rock to be met with from the mouth of the river to this point. The earliest general settlers at the place were in 1818 and 1819, though there were some in the neighborhood as early as 1812 and 1814. By 1820 settlers began to arrive at it. One of the earliest houses, a mere board cabin, was built at the "Point of Rocks" by Moses Austin in the latter part of 1819. A postoffice was established at the place, April 10th, 1820, and Amos Wheeler was appointed postmaster. He served until October 17th, 1821, when he was succeeded by Henry W. Conway, afterwards delegate in Congress.

---

7.—What was made the seat of justice of Pulaski county? What is now the county seat, and when did it become such?

8.—From what does the city of Little Rock take its name? At what date was it settled? At what date was there a postoffice established there?

**9. Laid Out as a Town.** The place was twice laid out as a town. First at some time prior to October, 1820, by William O'Hara, Stephen F. Austin, James Bryan and others, under a New Madrid certificate, which was claimed to have been previously located in the land office at St. Louis, and in this proceeding the town was given the name of Arkopolis (*Ark-op'-o-lis*). It was a second time laid out, November 20th, 1821, by William Russell, Henry W. Conway, Robert Crittenden, William Trimble, Robert C. Oden, Thomas P. Eskridge and Joseph Hardin, under preemption certificates. It was surveyed by Allen Martin, and was given the name of Little Rock. Neither of these entries of the land proved to be valid, and in 1838, Dr. Matthew Cunningham, who had settled at the place in January, 1820, located a preemption on part, and Chester Ashley and Roswell Beebe located the remainder on what were called "floats"—that is, land claims which could be located in any place. In 1839 the United States granted patents to Ashley and Beebe for the land, upon their executing an agreement to convey to the State, county, city and to individuals the same rights they had under the previous loca-

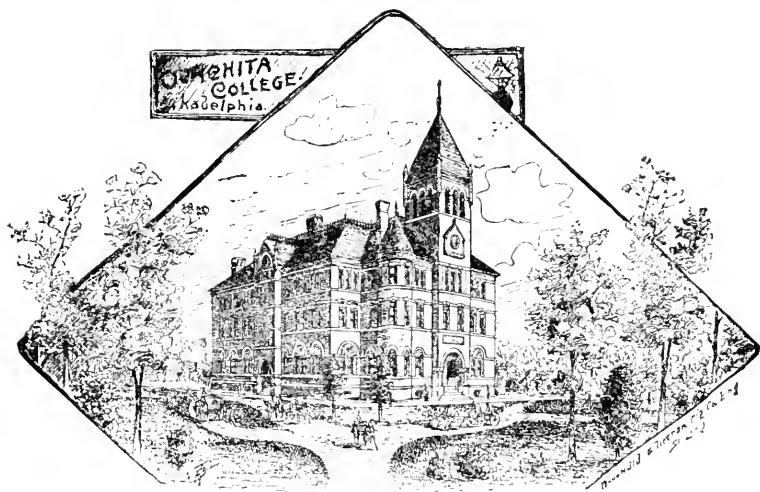
**NOTE.**—For the benefit of pupils in the schools at Little Rock, but which will not be of importance to those elsewhere, the following **TOWN LIMITS** and **STREET NAMES** are given. As originally laid out the town of Little Rock commenced at the Quapaw line on the east, or nearly the east line of Rock street, as all east of that point belonged to the Quapaw Indians. It ran west to Arch street, a distance of eight blocks and a half, according to the plat now in existence, but from which plat a part showing the most westerly part of the town has been torn off, and the streets were named Rock, Cumberland, Scott, East Main (now called Main street), Louisiana, Centre, Spring, West Main (now Broadway), and Arch. Commencing at the river and running southward it extended eleven blocks, and the streets were named North's reet, Water, Markam, Cherry (now Second), Mulberry (now Third), Walnut (now Fourth), Orange (now Fifth), Elizabeth (now Sixth), Chestnut (now Seventh), Holly (now Eighth), Hazle (now Ninth), Caroline (now Tenth), then one block to the town limits.

The **PRESENT LIMITS** commence at the east with Fletcher Avenue and run twenty-nine blocks westward, the streets being with the following names: Fletcher Avenue, Johns Avenue, East, Shall, Martin, McLean, Byrd and Collins streets, Rector Avenue, Ferry, Sherman and Commerce streets, lying east of the Quapaw line; Rock, Cumberland, Scott, Main, Louisiana, Centre, Spring, Broadway, Arch, Gaines, State, Izard, Clester, Ringo, Cros, Pulaski, Victory and Cove streets. Commencing at the river and running southward the names of the streets are: North, Water, Markham (which is equivalent to First street), Second, Third, Fourth, and so on consecutively to Twenty-Fifth street, beside which are many additions. By a city ordinance of about 1871 the streets running east and west, south of Markam, were given numbers instead of names.

---

**9.**—By whom was the town first laid out, and what name was given to it? Who next laid it out, and under what name? Who obtained the title to the land and how?

tions, which agreement was faithfully kept. It became the 'Territorial Capital, June 1st, 1821. Out of the small beginning of Moses Austin's cabin of 1819, the city has now grown to be a splendid and rapidly growing city. Stephen F. Austin, one of the original founders, afterwards became famous in the history of Texas, being the first person to establish American colonization therein in 1821; and the Moses Austin who built the cabin was his father.



10. Clark County, the fourth county formed, and named after Governor William Clark, Governor of Missouri Territory, is a southwest county. In its formation courts were directed to be held at the house of Jacob Barkman, and afterwards at Clark courthouse, where they were held until October 20th, 1825, when the county seat was located at a place called Biscoeville, but was

---

10.—When was Clark County formed? Out of what county formed? What is its geographical situation? What was made the seat of justice?

moved from there to the house of Adam Stroud in 1827. An effort was next made to secure its location at a place called Crittenden, but without success. In 1830 it was located at a place called Greenville, where it remained until 1842, when it was moved to Arkadelphia, where it now is: Arkadelphia, which is a place of considerable importance, lying on the St. Louis, Iron Mountain and Southern Railroad, is the chief place of the county.

**11. Hempstead County**, the fifth county formed, created December 15th, 1818, is also a southwest county. The county seat is Washington, which became such in 1824, the year in which the town was founded. Before that courts were held at the house of John English. The town of Washington is notable for having had among its citizens a remarkable number of men who have been distinguished in public affairs of the State and Nation, among whom are to be noted Judge Edward Cross, Judge of the Territorial Superior Court, and afterwards of the State Supreme Court, and member of Congress; Judge Daniel Ringo, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of the State, and United States District Judge from 1848 to 1861; A. H. Garland, Governor in 1874, United States Senator in 1886, and Attorney-General of the United States in 1885 to 1889; Judge John R. Eakin, Associate Justice of the Supreme Court from 1878 to 1884; Judge B. B. Battle, Associate Justice from 1884; Judge A. B. Williams, Circuit Judge and member of the Utah Commission; Senator James K. Jones, United States Senator, 1885 to 1891; Col. Dan W. Jones, Attorney-General from 1884 to 1889, and others.

**12. Arkansas Territory.** On the 2d of March, 1819, Congress created the Territory of Arkansas, to take effect July 4th, 1819. The name is called "Arkansaw" in the law creating it.

---

What other places have been such?

**11.**—When was Hempstead County formed? Out of what county formed? Where situated? What is the county seat? For what is Washington noted? Name some of its citizens who have become distinguished.

**12.**—At what date was the Territory of Arkansas formed? What was



The name occurs ten times therein, and is spelled s-a-w nine times and s-a-s only once. The seat of government was directed to be "at the Post of Arkansaw, on the Arkansaw River." The Territory extended from 33 degrees north latitude northward along the Mississippi River to 36 degrees; then ran west to the St. Francis River; thence up the St. Francis River "and its meanders" (*mee-an-ders*) to 36 degrees 30 minutes; thence west in a straight line to the western boundary line of Missouri Territory; thence south in a straight line to Red River; thence down Red River and along the Mexican boundary line to Louisiana.

The original western boundary line of the Territory made it as broad as Missouri Territory. and on the 26th day of May, 1824, Henry W. Conway, delegate in Congress from the Territory, secured the passage of a law which fixed the western boundary line at a point forty miles west of the western boundary line of Missouri Territory, and extending thence to Red River. This added a strip forty miles wide and of a length from Missouri to Red River, a distance of 150 miles; but this fine advantage was afterwards taken away, and more, too, by treaties with the Choctaw Indians, by which the line was established commencing at a point on the south bank of the river, one hundred paces east of old Fort Smith, and running thence to Red River, where it now is; and with the Cherokee Indians, by which north of the river the line commences at Fort Smith and runs thence northwesterly to the southwest corner of Missouri. The dividing line between Arkansas and the Cherokee Indians was agreed upon by treaty of May 8th, 1828, and was surveyed for them by the United States, in November, 1828. The line as established between Arkansas and these tribes has since remained the western boundary line of the State.

---

directed to be the seat of Government? What were its boundaries? What changes were made in its western boundary, and how?

**13. First Governor.** On the 3d March, 1819, James Monroe, who was President of the United States at that time, appointed General James Miller of New Hampshire, Governor, and Robert



JAMES MILLER, FIRST GOVERNOR OF ARKANSAS TERRITORY.

Crittenden of Frankfort, Kentucky, Secretary of the Territory of Arkansas. Governor James Miller was a distinguished officer of the war of 1812. At the battle of Lundy's Lane, when asked by his commanding officer if he could capture a battery of British guns, which was dealing destruction in the American ranks, he, well knowing the perilous nature of the undertaking, modestly replied, "I'll try, sir!" He charged the battery in gallant style and captured it. His words, "I'll try, sir," became historic. Mr.

Crittenden at the time of his appointment was only in the 22d year of his age. He too had served in the war of 1812, although then only 16 years of age. He was ensign in Captain Ben Desha's company, and was in service at Malden in Upper Canada.

---

**13.—**Who was appointed Governor of the new Territory, and when? Who was he? What distinction had he obtained in the war of 1812? Who was appointed Secretary of the Territory? Mention incidents of his career,

### III.—THE TERRITORIAL PERIOD.

*FROM 1819 TO 1836, WHEN THE TERRITORY WAS ADMITTED INTO THE UNION AS A STATE.*

#### CHAPTER VIII.

*1819 to 1824—Progress of the Territory.*

1. **Governor James Miller.** Mr. Crittenden reached the Territory in June, 1819, and, as Governor Miller had not yet arrived, took charge of affairs, and began exercising the duties of the Governorship and organizing the Territory. Governor Miller did not arrive until December 26th, 1819, and did not remain a great while. In October, 1824, he was appointed Collector of the Port of Salem, Massachusetts, and entered upon the duties of that office. Robert Crittenden discharged the duties of Governor both before his arrival and after his departure, as well as in occasional intervening times. Governor Miller died at Temple, New Hampshire, July 7th, 1851.



ROBERT CRITTENDEN,  
FIRST SECRETARY AND FIRST ACTING GOVERNOR OF ARKANSAS  
TERRITORY.

---

CHAPTER VIII. 1.—Who first acted as Governor in the Territory? How long did Governor Miller remain therein?

**2. Organization of the Territory.** In organizing the Territory Mr. Crittenden encountered many embarrassments. The central portion of the State was held by the Quapaw Indians, and the northwestern portion by the Cherokees. The whole population was about 14,000 people, mostly new emigrants, scattered at wide distances, separated from each other by impenetrable wildernesses, with not a road to connect them; with only two towns and two postoffices, Davidsonville and Arkansas Post, and one settlement just beginning to be made at the Cadron, and another at the Little Rock; with not a dollar in the Treasury to begin on, and with no hope of getting any aid from the National Treasury, which was then burdened with a heavy debt growing out of the recent war with England. It was under these unfavorable conditions that Mr. Crittenden's official career began.

**3. First Legislature.** On the 28th of July, 1819, the first Legislature of the Territory sat. It consisted of Mr. Crittenden, acting Governor, and the Judges of the Supreme Court—Judges Charles Jonett, Robert P. Letcher and Andrew Scott. They passed necessary laws for the government of the Territory, and the necessary officers were appointed. George W. Scott was appointed the first Auditor, and James Scull the first Treasurer. James Woodson Bates was appointed Judge of the First Circuit, composed of the counties of Arkansas and Lawrence, but soon resigned to become a candidate for Congress, and Major S. B. Archer, late of the United States Army, was appointed his successor; Neill McLean was appointed Judge of the Second Circuit, composed of the counties of Pulaski, Clark and Hempstead. Judge McLean soon resigned and Stephen F. Austin was appointed his successor. Mr. Crittenden issued a proclamation for

---

2.—Who organized the Territory, and with what difficulties was the effort to do so accompanied?

3.—Who composed the first Legislature? When and where did they sit? Who was the first Auditor? Treasurer? Who were the first Circuit Judges?

an election for a delegate in Congress, to be held in November. At this election James Woodson Bates was elected, and thus became the first representative in Congress from the Territory. He was a brother of Frederick Bates, first Secretary of Missouri Territory. In the early part of 1820 President Monroe appointed Judges Benjamin Johnson and Andrew Scott Judges of the Superior or United States Court, and so the Territory began its official life with the necessary complement of public officers.

**4. William E. Woodruff.** *The Gazette.* On the 31st day of October, 1819, William E. Woodruff arrived at the Post of Arkansas, and shortly afterwards began the publication of the *Arkansas Gazette*, THE FIRST NEWSPAPER published in the Territory, and fifth one published west of the Mississippi River. The paper is still in existence, published at the Capital, and is the leading newspaper of the State. Mr. Woodruff, its founder, was a practical printer, having learned the business in his youth at Sag Harbor, New York. He was born near Belleport in Suffolk County, New York, December 24th,



WILLIAM E. WOODRUFF,  
FOUNDER OF THE FIRST ARKANSAS NEWSPAPER, 1819.  
(PORTRAIT SHOWING HIM AT THE AGE OF 75 YEARS.)

Who was the first delegate to Congress from the Territory? Who were the first Judges of the Superior or United States Court?

**4.**—What was the first newspaper established in the Territory? When, where and by whom founded? Relate the incidents of its establishment

1795. On arriving at manhood he came west to seek his fortune, and determined to come to Arkansas, the Territory having just been formed. He purchased a small printing press and printer's outfit in Franklin, Tennessee, and had it carried to the Cumberland River; then floated it in keelboats, or flatboats, down the Cumberland to the Ohio; down the Ohio to the Mississippi, and down the Mississippi to Montgomery's Point, near the mouth of White River. There were no steamboats running in the Arkansas River at that date, so the press and outfit were loaded on two pirogues, or "dug outs," which, with the aid of boatmen, were pushed along with poles through the "cut off," and up the Arkansas River until the Post was safely reached. Here a log cabin was improvised for a printing office, and the publication of the paper began. The first issue of the paper was made Saturday, November 20th, 1819. It was published at the Post until 1821, when the Territorial Capital having been moved to Little Rock, the paper was moved there also, and has since been published there. It has been published regularly—first as a weekly, and afterwards as a daily and weekly—from the date of its founding until the present time except the time in which it was being moved to Little Rock, and a short interval during the Civil War. The last issue at the Post was made November 24th, 1821; and the first issue at Little Rock was made December 29th, 1821, and was volume III, No. 3, whole No. 107. It was the only paper published in the Territory until 1830. Mr. Woodruff, its founder, died in Little Rock in 1885, at the advanced age of ninety years.

5. **First Legislature with Delegates.** In February, 1820, the first Legislature with delegates elected by the people convened at the Post of Arkansas, and held their session in two rooms of the

---

and career. When moved to Little Rock? When was the first and when the last issue at the Post of Arkansas? When was the first issue at Little Rock? For how long was it the only paper in the Territory?

5.—At what date and where was held the first Legislature with delegates

residence of Robert Crittenden, there being no public buildings for their use. One of the measures of importance considered by them was the question of removing the seat of Government. The matter was carried over to an adjourned session held in the Fall. Governor Miller, in the meantime, visited the Little Rock, the contemplated location, and, approving of the selection, the bill for the removal was passed in October, 1820, to take effect June 1st, 1821, locating the seat of Government at the Little Rock, where it has since remained. In the Government census of 1820 the population of Arkansas Territory was 14,255.

**6. Counties Formed. Miller County.** These sessions of the Legislature created four new counties, to-wit: Miller, Phillips, Crawford and Independence.

**MILLER COUNTY**, the sixth county created, was formed April 1st, 1820, out of territory taken from Hempstead County, and was named after Governor James Miller. Its western boundary line was not well defined, so that when it came to be surveyed the greater part of the county fell within the limits of Mexico or Texas. It was abolished altogether in 1836, but was re-formed December 22d, 1874. It is a southwest country, lying along the State line, west of Red River, and the city of Texarkana, which is one of the thriving cities of the State, is its county seat. The city of Texarkana lies just on the State line, part of it being in Texas and part in Arkansas. It has two separate municipal governments, and part of it is called Texarkana, Arkansas, and part Texarkana, Texas. The name is formed out of a combination of the names of *Texas*, *Arkansas* and *Louisiana*, as it is near the junction of the three.

---

from the people? What important measure did they adopt? When did the removal take place? What was the population of Arkansas Territory in the Government census of 1820?

**6.**—At what date was Miller County formed? From what county taken? Who named for? Relate incidents in its career? What is the county seat? How is this city situated?

7. **Phillips County**, the seventh county created, was formed May 1st, 1820, out of territory taken from Arkansas County, and was named after Sylvanus Phillips, a prominent resident of Arkansas County in early times. The county seat was directed to be at a place called Monticello. In 1830 it was established at Helena, where it has since remained. Helena, which is one of the most important places in the State, dates its existence from about the year 1828 or 1829. Phillips is an eastern county, lying along the banks of the Mississippi River. Helena is one of the important points for steamboat traffic along that river.

8. **Crawford County**, the eighth county formed, was created October 18th, 1820, out of territory taken from Pulaski County, and was named after Hon. William H. Crawford, Secretary of War under President Madison, and Secretary of the Treasury under President Monroe. The seat of justice was directed to be at Fort Smith, but was located by commissioners first at the house of William Whitson, and afterwards at Crawford Courthouse, eighteen miles below Van Buren. It remained here until 1836, when it was moved to Van Buren, where it has since remained. The town of Van Buren had its origin in March, 1831, when a postoffice was established at Phillips Landing, on the river, five miles below Fort Smith, and was named Van Buren, after Martin Van Buren. Thomas Phillips was appointed postmaster, and in October, 1835, had, as proprietor, a sale of lands at the place. The town was founded and laid off into lots in 1836 by John Drennen and David Thompson. Crawford is a

---

7.—At what date was Phillips County formed? What number is it in the order of formation of counties? From what county taken? What is the county seat? When established as such? At what date was the city founded?

8.—At what date was Crawford County created? Number? From what county taken? Who named for? The county seat? What places have been county seats? At what date was Van Buren founded?



northwest county, lying along and north of the Arkansas River, its western border reaching to the State line.

**9. Independence County**, the ninth county formed, was created October 23d, 1820, out of territory taken from Lawrence County. The seat of justice was directed to be at the house of Charles Kelley on White River. In 1821 the county seat was established at Batesville, where it has since remained. Batesville was founded in 1821, and was named after James Woodson Bates, first delegate in Congress from Arkansas Territory, and at that time serving in that position. Independence is an interior county northeast, and Batesville is its chief town.

**10. Northern Boundary Line.** In the Fall of the year 1823 Joseph C. Brown, a surveyor, ran the boundary line between Arkansas and Missouri, from the southwest corner of Missouri, eastward, to the St. Francis River, on latitude  $36^{\circ} 30'$ , 233 miles. He here left off, but in the Spring of 1824 continued the line down the St. Francis River to latitude  $36^{\circ}$ , and from thence eastward to the Mississippi River. As the country was mostly under water it was necessary for the surveyors to go in canoes to locate the line; hence the survey proved very imperfect and indefinite. It was re-surveyed, and was located, as now established, in 1844-1845, by Davis Thompson, commissioner for Arkansas, and Governor Dunklin first, and after his death Dr. George Penn, commissioner for Missouri.

**11. Chicot County.** The next county to be formed was the county of Chicot, which was created October 25th, 1823, out of ter-

---

**9.**—At what date was Independence County created? Number? From what county created? Where situated? What is the county seat? When did it become so? When was this town founded? For whom named?

**10.**—At what date and by whom was the northern boundary line of Arkansas first surveyed? Describe the manner in which the survey was made. By whom was it afterwards surveyed, and when?

**11.**—At what date was Chicot County created? From what county

ritory taken from Arkansas County. It was the tenth county created. Its name comes from Point Chicot, a point on the Mississippi River, known of in very early times, and being in its limits. The name Chicot is probably the remains of the ancient name *Chisca*, by which an Indian village on the opposite side of the river was called. Near this village, as we have seen, De Soto discovered and crossed the Mississippi River in 1541. The location of the village of Chisca (*Chiz-cah*), on the earliest maps, is given as being east of the Mississippi, and about opposite the present city of Helena. The county seat of Chicot County was located at a place called Villemont, on the Mississippi River, on the tract granted by the Baron de Carondelet to Don Carlos de Villemont, the town being named after the latter. On account of the indefiniteness of the title to the land the town could not be made to thrive, although some considerable improvements were made there. Accordingly, in 1840, the county seat was moved to the town of Columbia, where it remained for a number of years, and was then established at Lake Village, where it now is. Chicot County is in the extreme southeast corner of the State, bounded east by the Mississippi River and south by Louisiana.

**12. Second Treaty with the Quapaws.** On the 15th of November, 1824, occurred the second treaty with the Quapaw Indians, by which they ceded to the United States the 1,500,000 acres in the centre of the Territory reserved by them in the treaty of 1818. The treaty was concluded at the residence of Bartley Harrington, in Arkansas County, and was negotiated by Robert Crittenden as commissioner, with Thomas W. Newton as secretary, and Robert C. Oden, Terence Farrelly, Gordon Neill, Bartley Harrington, Antoine Barraque, Edmund Hogan and

---

taken? Its number? From what is its name derived? What is the present county seat? When did it become so? What other places have been county seats? Where is the county situated, and how bounded?

**12.**—When, where and by whom was the second treaty with the Quapaw

others as witnesses. For certain considerations the Quapaws moved out of the Territory and settled on Red River in Louisiana. The chiefs of the tribe who made the treaty were Heckaton, Saracen and others. Heckaton was the last full-blooded Quapaw chief. He died shortly after his tribe moved to their new residence, and was succeeded by Saracen, who was a half-breed. Saracen was a brave and noble Indian. Once he rendered an important service to a trapper family living below Pine Bluff, by restoring to them two of their children, which had been stolen by a roving band of Indians. When this treaty was made a reservation of eighty acres of land "opposite Vaugine's, to be laid off so as to include his improvements, where he now resides," was made for Saracen. He emigrated with his tribe, but by permission of Governor Pope returned to Arkansas and lived on his reservation. He lived to the advanced age of ninety years, and when he died, in 1839, was buried in Pine Bluff, the first burial in the cemetery where he lies.

## CHAPTER IX.

*1824 to 1828—Counties Formed. First Steamboat. Cherokees.*

**I. Governor George Izard.** With the appointment of Governor Miller as Collector of the Port of Salem in 1824, and his acceptance of the office, there was a vacancy in the office of Governor of the Territory, and under the law, which required that the Secretary should discharge the duties in the absence of the Governor, Robert Crittenden acted as Governor until in the early part of the year 1825, when General George Izard, of South Carolina,

Indians made? What quantity of land did they cede? Name some of the parties mentioned as witnessing the treaty. By what chiefs was it concluded? Who was Saracen? Relate an incident in his career. What reservation of lands was made for him? What is said of his death and burial?

**CHAPTER IX. 1** —Who was the second Governor of the Territory? By what President appointed? Who was he?

was appointed Governor by President John Quincy Adams, and assumed the duties of the position; Mr. Crittenden remaining Secretary. Governor Izard, who was a General in the American Army in the war of 1812, was born in South Carolina in 1777. He served as Governor of Arkansas Territory until November 22d, 1828, at which date he died in Little Rock.

During the year 1825 the western boundary line of Arkansas Territory, from Red River to the Arkansas River, was surveyed; being the dividing line between the Territory and the Choctaw Indians. The survey was made by James S. Conway of Lafayette County, afterwards Governor.

**2. Conway County.** The next county formed was named Conway County, in honor of Henry W. Conway, the delegate in Congress. It was the eleventh county created, and was formed October 20th, 1825, out of a portion of Pulaski County. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the Cadron. The location of the county seat was made the subject of many changes. It was located at a place called Marion; then at Harrisburg. In 1831 it was located at a place on the river, on lands donated by Nimrod Menefee, and called Lewisburg. It remained here until November, 1883, when it was moved to Morrillton, where it now is. Conway is an interior county, northwest of centre, and lies along the line of the Little Rock and Fort Smith Railway. Morrillton is its chief town, and dates its existence from the year 1875, when the railroad was being built; a station having been established there and named after E. J. and George H. Morrill, who owned the land.

**3. Crittenden County,** the twelfth county created, was formed

---

**2.**—What was the next county created? At what date? For whom named? Out of what county taken? Its number? What places have been its county seat? The present county seat? When founded, and for whom named?

**3.**—The date at which Crittenden County was formed? Its number?

October 22d, 1825, out of territory taken from Phillips County, and was named in honor of Secretary Robert Crittenden. The county seat was located first at a place called Greenock, where it remained until January 25th, 1837, when it was established at Marion, where it now is. Crittenden is an eastern county, lying along the Mississippi River, opposite Memphis. Marion is the chief town of the county, and was founded in 1837.

4. **Izard County**, the thirteenth county created, was formed October 27th, 1825, out of territory taken from Independence County, and was named for the Governor, George Izard. The seat of justice was directed to be at the house of Jacob Wolf. It was next established at a place called Liberty, where it remained until 1835 or 1836, when it was established at Mount Olive. This remained the county seat until 1846, when the county seat was established at Mount Vernon, where it remained until May 10th, 1875, when it was established at Melbourne, where it now is. Melbourne was founded the same year in which it became the county seat. Izard County is a northern county, not far from the Missouri line. It is only separated from Missouri by the county of Fulton.

5. **Loveley County**. The fourteenth county created was given the name of Loveley County. It was formed October 13th, 1827, out of a portion of land in the northwest corner of the Territory, not previously assigned to any county. These lands had been obtained by purchase from the Osage Indians; a Mr. Peter Loveley being the negotiator of the purchase; hence it was known as the "Loveley Purchase," and the county was named after him. The county did not last long, but was abolished on the 17th of

---

From what county taken? For whom named? What places have been county seats, and dates thereof? Location of the county?

4.—Izard County—when formed? Number? From what county taken? For whom named? What places have been the county seat, and dates thereof? Situation?

5.—Loveley County—when formed? Number? From what county

October, 1828, having been in existence just one year. Washington County was created to take its place. The greater part of Loveley County was cut off by the Cherokee Treaty of May, 1828.

6. **St. Francis County.** The next county created was St. Francis County, which was formed October 13th, 1827, out of part of Phillips County, and was the fifteenth county by number. It took its name from the St. Francis River, which runs through its territory. The seat of justice was first at the house of William Strong, but was afterwards located by commissioners at the town of Franklin, where it remained for some time, when it was moved to Madison, and in 1874 was moved from there to Forrest City, where it now is. St. Francis is an interior county, east; lying along the Memphis and Little Rock Railroad. Forrest City is the principal town.

7. **Lafayette County**, the sixteenth county created, was formed October 18th, 1827, out of territory taken from Hempstead County, and was called in honor of the Marquis of that name, who aided us in the Revolutionary War. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the residence of Joshua Morrison, but was located by commissioners at Chickomin Prairie, where it remained until 1841, when it was removed to Lewisville, where it now is. Lafayette is a southwestern county, touching the Louisiana line on the south, and on the west is bordered by Red River the whole of the county's length. It is separated from Texas by Miller County on the west. Lewisville is its chief town, and was founded in the year 1841.

formed? For whom named? When abolished, and why?

6.—St. Francis County—when formed? From what county taken? Number? From what is its name derived? What places have been the county seat? Situation? Its principal town?

7.—Lafayette County—when formed? From what county taken? For whom named? Its county seats, and dates thereof? Where situated? Its chief town, and when founded?

8. **Ambrose H. Sevier.** Upon the death of Henry W. Conway in November of the year 1827, Ambrose H. Sevier was elected his successor in Congress. Mr. Sevier was elected to that position five times, and served with ability and distinction from 1827 to 1836, when the Territory was admitted as a State, and was then elected United States Senator. He was twice elected to this position, and served until 1848, when he resigned to become Minister to Mexico. By his labors he was able to accomplish great good for the Territory and State, and was indefatigable in his efforts in her behalf. He died in 1848, and is buried at Little Rock, where the State of Arkansas caused a Monument to his memory to be erected, in recognition of his eminent services.



AMBROSE H. SEVIER,  
CONGRESSMAN AND U. S. SENATOR FOR 21 YEARS

9. **First Steamboat.** In January, 1828, the first steamboat that ever navigated the Arkansas River ascended the river, reaching Little Rock on the 24th day of that month. It was the steamer "*Facility*," commanded by CAPTAIN PHILIP PENNYWIT. Captain Pennywit was an early resident of Cincinnati. He settled

---

8.—Who succeeded Henry W. Conway as delegate to Congress in 1827? Mention his official services?

9.—At what date did the first steamboat ascend the Arkansas River? Her name, and by whom commanded? Mention incidents as to him?

there when there was only one other merchant in the place. He built the first steamboat ever built there, and named her the *Cincinnati*. He was the first to navigate White River in 1830 and 1831, in command of the *Waverly*; reaching Batesville the first time January 3d, 1831. He continued actively in the navigation of the river until 1847, when he gave up steamboating and entered into the mercantile pursuits at Van Buren. He erected large flouring mills there, known as Pennywit's Mills. He died in Little Rock, January 9th, 1868, aged seventy-five years. A steamboat journey of the days when Captain Pennywit first navigated the river was a formidable thing indeed. The boats advertised that they would make the trip from Little Rock to New Orleans and return in from twenty-five to thirty days, and it was recorded as a great evidence of speed in the *Waverly* that on one occasion she made that trip "in a few hours over twenty days."

**10. Second Treaty with the Cherokees.** On the 6th of May, 1828, occurred the second treaty with the Cherokee Indians, by which they were moved from Arkansas and settled in the Indian Territory. By their removal the last tribe of Indians passed away from the Territory. The only Indians left were a few individual Quapaws, living in what was then Arkansas County, but is now Jefferson County. In the making of the treaty, however, a considerable portion of the western border, west of Missouri, was taken off, being that which was known as "the Loveley Purchase," which was at that date formed into the county of Loveley, as has been mentioned. The line, as left, extended obliquely from Fort Smith to the southwest corner of Missouri. In the making of this treaty the United States made an allowance of \$500 to George Guess, a Cherokee, whose Indian name was Se-quo-yah, for his having invented an alphabet for the Cherokee language.

---

When did he ascend White River? What is said of steamboat journeys of that time?

**10.**—What treaty took place in 1828? What was the effect of it? Men-



The alphabet at first consisted of 200 characters to represent, by marks, all the sounds uttered by Cherokees in conversation, but he afterwards reduced them to eighty-six in number. This is the alphabet now generally used among the Cherokees, and by it those who had previously despaired of being able to understand the English characters, soon learned to read in Cherokee. One of his first works was to translate the New Testament into Cherokee, the same as is now used, and the treaty itself was signed by himself and other Cherokees in the characters of this alphabet.

**11. Sevier County.** On the 17th of October, 1828, the Legislature created a new county out of portions of Hempstead and Miller Counties, and gave it the name of Sevier County in honor of Ambrose H. Sevier, the delegate in Congress. It was the seventeenth county formed. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of Joseph English, but in 1829 it was located at Paraclifta, a town named after an Indian chief. The county seat remained here until 1871, when it was moved to Lockesburg, where it now is. The county is a southwest county, bounded west by the Indian Territory, and south by Little River. Lockesburg is the principal town, and was founded in 1871, the year it became the county seat.

**12. Washington County,** the eighteenth county created, was also formed October 17th, 1828, and was made to take the place of Loveley County, which latter county was extinguished. It was

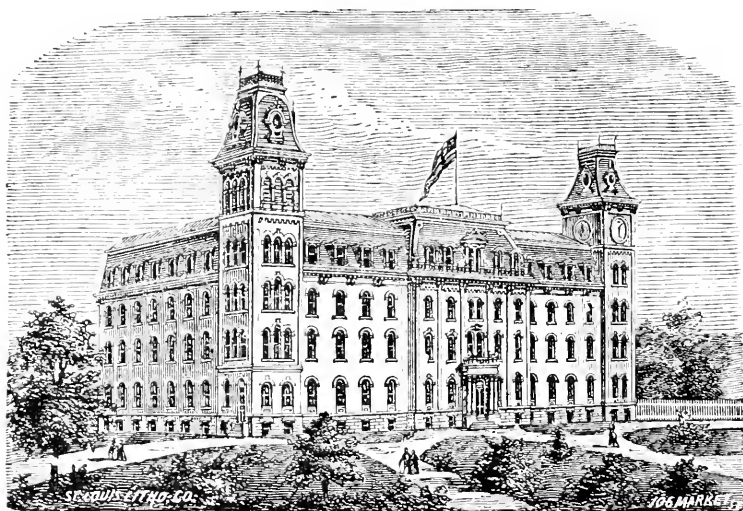
---

tion an allowance which was made in this treaty. To whom made, and for what?

**11.—Sevier County—**when formed? From what county taken? For whom named? Its number? The county seat and dates? Situation? Its principal town, and when founded?

**12.—Washington County—**when formed? What county was it made to take the place off? Its number? County seat? Situation? Celebrated productions? When was the county seat founded? Who was the first settler thereof? Its first name? When and how did it become named Fayetteville? For whom probably named? What State institution is situated there?

named in honor of "the Father of his country." The county seat was located in 1828 at Fayetteville, where it now is. Washington is a northwestern county, bounded west by the Cherokee nation, and north by Benton County, which separates it from Missouri. It is noted for the salubrity of its climate, being high and with mountainous regions. Among its productions the Shannon and other apples grown in the county, have attracted world-wide atten-



ARKANSAS INDUSTRIAL UNIVERSITY.

tion. Fayetteville, its chief place, is the largest and most important city in that part of the country. It was founded in 1828. James McGarrah made the first settlement, building a cabin at the place where the city now stands. It bore the name of Washington Courthouse until 1829, when a postoffice was established there, with Brasil Newton as postmaster, and by direction of Postmaster-General Barry, the name was changed to Fayetteville. It is prob-

able that the first part of the name was bestowed in honor of the Marquis de Lafayette, who, a short time previously, had made a visit to the United States and had been welcomed with a great ovation. The city contains many valuable and costly buildings, and is the seat of the Arkansas Industrial University, a State institution.

## CHAPTER X.

### *1829 — Governor Pope's Administration.*

**1. John Pope, Governor.** Upon the death of Governor Izard, November 22d, 1828, a vacancy again existed in the Governorship, and Robert Crittenden as Secretary again assumed its functions. He discharged the duties of the office until May 21st, 1829, when he was relieved by the arrival of Judge William S. Fulton of Florence, Alabama, his successor, who had been appointed Secretary of the Territory, and who now assumed the duties of that office, as well as of acting Governor. On the 9th of March, 1829, President Jackson appointed Hon. John Pope, a distinguished lawyer of Louisville, Kentucky, Governor of the Territory. Governor Pope reached the Territorial Capital in the latter part of May, and entered upon his duties. Upon this, the termination of his official career, Mr. Crittenden became a prominent lawyer and politician in Arkansas, being the leader of the Whig party. He died in 1834, at Vicksburg, Mississippi, while on a business visit to that place, in the thirty-seventh year of his age. He was a native of Kentucky; born in Woodford County in 1797.

**2. Gov. Pope's Services.** In the discharge of his duties Governor Pope proved to be a faithful and efficient public servant, and a man of distinguished ability. He was twice appointed Gov-

---

CHAPTER X. 1.—Who succeeded Governor Izard as Governor, and when? Who succeeded Robert Crittenden as Secretary? Relate Mr. Crittenden's subsequent career.

2.—What is said of Governor Pope?

error—to-wit: in 1829, and again in 1832. He held the office until 1835, after which he returned to Kentucky, and was elected to Congress from that State in 1838 and 1840. He died in 1844, at the age of seventy-four years.

**3. The Ten Sections of Land.** During his first term of office Congress, which granted many favors to the Territory, made a grant of ten sections of land, and a further grant of one thousand acres, the proceeds of which, when sold, should be applied to the erection of a Statehouse and public buildings. Governor Pope superintended the sale of these lands, and with the proceeds commenced the erection of the Statehouse buildings which have since been used as the State Capitol. The buildings were commenced in 1833, but were not fully completed for eight or ten years. He was also active in forwarding the making of roads and other public improvements, of which the country stood greatly in need.

**4. Counties formed. Public Offices.** The Legislature which convened in the Autumn of 1829 devoted considerable attention to the formation of new counties. Six were formed—to-wit: Pope, Hot Spring, Union, Monroe, Jefferson and Jackson. As these early legislative assemblies had no hall or public buildings in which to hold their sessions, they generally sat in “the Baptist meetinghouse,” a little log church, or meetinghouse, in which the terms of the United States Court were also, at other times, held. The accommodations for the public officers were wretched. There was no Governor’s office, nor was there any Secretary’s office, except a small board shanty. But in 1827 Mr. Crittenden having built a brick residence at the Capital, the first brick building erected in the town, following the custom of the day also built a small brick office in the yard, which was used as the Secre-

---

3.—What grants did Congress make to the Territory? How were they employed?

4.—What new counties were formed by the Legislature of 1829? What accommodations existed for the public offices in those times?

tary's office, and in it the public records were preserved, as long as he was Secretary. Other public officers, such as the Auditor, land officers and others, often had no better place for the public records, and the transaction of public business, than a part of some merchant's countingroom, or the back part of some store.

**5. Pope County**, the nineteenth created, was formed November 2d, 1829, out of territory taken from Crawford County, and was named in honor of the Governor, John Pope. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of John Bollinger. The commissioners appointed to select a place located it at Scotia, the residence of Judge Andrew Scott, the next house to Bollinger's, in the neighborhood settlement. In 1833, upon the formation of Johnson County, which took off a part of Pope County, the county seat was established at "Old Dwight," which was the name of what had been a mission station among the Cherokee Indians, established at an early date. The county seat was next established at Norristown in 1834, and from there was moved to Dover in 1841. It remained at Dover until March 19th, 1887, when by a vote of the people, it was moved to Russellville, where it now is. Pope is an interior county, northwest of centre. Its southern boundary is formed by the Arkansas River. Russellville is its chief town, a place of considerable importance, and having many handsome and costly buildings. A short distance from Russellville is Norristown, which is now entirely deserted. There is a tradition current among the earlier inhabitants, that, on one occasion, Norristown came within one vote of being selected as the place for the State Capital.

**6. Union County**, the twentieth county created, was established November 2d, 1829, out of territory taken from the counties of

---

**5.—Pope County**—when formed? Number? From what county taken? For whom named? What place is now the county seat? What places have been county seat of the county, and dates? What tradition exists as to Norristown?

**6.—Union County**—when created? Its number? From what counties

Hempstead and Clark. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of John Nunn. Commissioners to select the place of the county seat located it, in 1830, at a point on the Ouachita River, which was known throughout the neighborhood as *Écore a Fabr * (*A-corc-ah-Fah-bray*), or "Fabr 's Bluff," after a Frenchman named Fabr  (*Fah-bray*), who had settled there at an early date. In 1836 the Legislature moved the county seat to the house of Jeremiah Smith, but the Legislature of 1837 moved it back to * core a Fabr *. By the division of Union County in 1842, upon the establishment of Ouachita County, * core a Fabr * fell within the limits of the new county, and was where the city of Camden now stands. The town of El Dorado, which was founded in 1844 and is the chief town, became the county seat of Union County, and is such now. Union is a southern border county, bounded south by the Louisiana line, and east by the Ouachita River.

7. **Hot Spring County**, the twenty-first county created, was formed November 2d, 1829, out of territory taken from Clark County, and took its name from the celebrated Hot Springs, which were originally situated within its limits, but which, on the establishment of Garland County in 1873, fell within the limits of the new county. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of Alexander Rogers, but in 1830 the county seat was located at Rockport. It remained here until, at the general election in September, 1878, by a vote of the people, the county seat was ordered moved to Malvern, where it now is. The county is a southwestern interior county. Malvern is the chief town of

---

taken? What places have been the county seat? Its situation? Its chief town, and when founded?

7.—Hot Spring County—when formed? From what county taken? Its number in the order of formation? From what does it take its name? What is now the county seat? What other places have been the seat of justice? What is the location of the county?

the county—a place of considerable importance. It was laid out as a town in 1876.

**8. Monroe County**, the twenty-second county created, was established November 2d, 1829, out of territory taken from the counties of Phillips and Arkansas, and was named after President James Monroe. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of Thomas Maddux, but in the next year was located by commissioners at Lawrenceville, where it remained until 1856. In the forepart of that year the question of moving the county seat to Clarendon, was submitted to a vote of the people, and the vote was for its removal. The order for the removal of the county records was made in October, 1857, and the county seat has since remained there. Monroe County is an eastern interior county, lying along White River, which forms its southwestern boundary. Its principal towns are Clarendon and Brinkley. Both are railroad centres.

**9. Jefferson County**, the twenty-third county established, was created November 2d, 1829, out of territory taken from the counties of Arkansas and Pulaski, and was named after President Thomas Jefferson. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of Joseph Bonne (*Bonn*), a Frenchman, who had served as interpreter in the making of the Quapaw Treaty of 1818. In 1830 commissioners for the purpose located the county seat at the same place, called Pine Bluff. In April, 1832, the county seat was moved three miles down the river to a place owned by Antoine Barraque (*An-twine Baar-ra-kay*), but in August of the same year a vote of the people was had on the subject, and it was moved back to Pine Bluff, where it has since remained. Jefferson County is an extremely fertile and productive county, lying along,

---

**8.**—Monroe County—when created? Its number? From what counties taken? For whom named? What places have been the seat of justice, and dates? Its principal towns?

**9.**—Jefferson County—when created? Its number? From what counties

and on both sides of, the Arkansas River, southeast of centre. Pine Bluff, which is one of the most thriving and important cities in the State, is its chief town. It contains many handsome churches, fine business and school buildings—one of the latter being the Colored Normal College—and possesses many public enterprises and elegant residences. It was founded as a



A COTTON FIELD.

town in 1832 by John W. and James T. Pullen, proprietors of the land. A postoffice, called Pine Bluff was there as early as 1828, James Scull being postmaster. The first settler at the place where the city now is was Joseph Bonne, who, in 1819, pitched his camp in the pine forest on the bank of the river, and lived with no neighbor near for several years, when John W. Pullen came from North Carolina, with his family, and pitched his tent near that of Bonne's, and bought land. After a while other settlers came, and from that time on it gradually grew to become a settlement of importance, and eventually to become the thriving city that it is.

---

taken? For whom named? What have been the county seats? Its situation? Its chief town? When founded? Its earliest settlers?



10. **Jackson County**, the twenty-fourth county created, was formed November 5th, 1829, out of territory taken from Independence County, and was named after General Andrew Jackson, the hero of the War of 1812, then President. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of Thomas Wide-man. In 1832 the town of Litchfield was made the county seat, and so remained until 1839, when the town of Elizabeth was chosen. This remained the county seat until 1852, when the town of Augusta, now in Woodruff County, was made such; and in 1854 the county seat was located at Jacksonport, where it now is. When the county was created it was but very sparsely settled. For more than a year after its formation it had neither postoffice, postmaster, nor postroad, in its limits; the nearest postoffice being Batesville, forty miles away, in the neighboring county of Independence. It had no roads, but mere bridle paths, to connect scattered settlements, and five years after its formation its population was only 333 persons. The county is an interior northeast county, lying along White River. Black River forms its north-western boundary. The principal towns are Jacksonport and Newport. Of these Newport is the largest and most important. Jacksonport was founded in 1840 by Thomas Truesdale. It is at the junction of White and Black Rivers. Newport dates its existence from about 1873, when the railroad was built there. It contains many valuable buildings, and is a growing and thriving place.

## CHAPTER XI.

### *1830 to 1833—Emigration and Counties.*

1. **Emigration.** The year 1830 was one of great emigration to the Territory. There were now several boats regularly plying

---

10.—Jackson County—when created? Its number? From what county taken? The county seats, and dates? What is said of its condition at its formation and for some time afterwards? Its situation? Its principal town? When founded?

CHAPTER XI. 1.—What was the condition of steamboating in 1830?

the Arkansas River—to-wit: the *Waverly*, Captain Pennywit; the *Saratoga*, the *Laurel* and the *Reindeer*. The latter was commanded by Captain David Miller, a famous man in steamboat circles of that day. Captain Pennywit also navigated White River, for the first time, in the Winter of 1830-1831, with the *Waverly*, and, finding it a good river for steamboating, other boats also engaged therein. The *Bob Handy* went regularly into the running of the river in 1831 and 1832, and also made trips on Black River. In June, 1831, Colonel Benjamin R. Milam, of Lost Prairie, Miller County, Arkansas, navigated a steamboat (the *Alps*) through the Raft in Red River, and up the river beyond, being the first boat to ascend above the Raft. All of these boats brought numbers of emigrants, and in addition to this there were numbers of Indians removing to the Territory allotted to them west of the Mississippi River, thus making business in steamboating very active at that time. The population of the Territory of Arkansas in 1830 stood 30,388, an increase of 16,133 over what it was in 1820.

**2. Southern Boundary Line.** Toward the close of the year 1830, the boundary line between Arkansas and Louisiana was surveyed, by commissioners appointed for the purpose from the two. James S. Conway, of Lafayette County, afterwards Surveyor-General, and then Governor, and William Pelham, of Batesville, were appointed by the President to represent Arkansas, and R. A. Crane, of Alexandria, Louisiana, was appointed by the Governor of Louisiana to represent that State. The parties appointed met at Villemont, Chicot County, and began their labors November 1st, 1830. The line commenced on the 33rd degree of north latitude, and ran west 149½ miles, when it reached Red River. The line as established has since remained the dividing line be-

---

2.—When and by whom was the boundary line between Arkansas and Louisiana surveyed? Where did the line commence, and where run to? When finished? Under what difficulties was the survey made?

tween the two States. The survey was finished January 30th, 1831, and was made in the worst possible weather. Out of the ninety-one days they were engaged, there were only three days in which they were not wading or breaking the ice to make progress; as the line ran through an interminable stretch of flat, marshy country, made all the more impassable by the great amount of rain and snow which fell in the season.

**3. Emigration of Indians.** In the year 1832, also, there was great emigration of Indians through Arkansas Territory, who were being moved to their reservation by the United States Government. In all, upwards of 13,000 of them, of all tribes, passed through Arkansas Territory. Many ascended the Arkansas River to "Cantonment Gibson," as it was then called; others were landed at Roc Roe, on White River, and marched overland through Dardanelle to Fort Smith; and still others passed through Écore a Fabré and Washington. The emigration in the Autumn was much distressed by the existence of cholera, which prevailed with great fatality, and many of the emigrating tribes died on the journey. Great efforts were made to prevent the disease from spreading through the Territory in epidemic form, and by this means its existence was confined chiefly to individual cases.

**4. Great Overflow of the Rivers.** The month of May, 1833, was a season of almost incessant rain. There was hardly a fair day in the whole month. As a consequence all the streams and water courses were full to overflowing. It proved to be the occasion of the GREATEST FRESHET that was ever known in the Arkansas River. From Crawford Courthouse to the mouth of the river every bottom along the river was under water, and the whole country was inundated. Thousands of acres of corn and other crops, together with the dwellings, barns, stables and fences of farmers were swept away. Many plantations were ruined by the

---

3.—What is said of the emigration of Indians in 1832?

4.—What is said of the overflow of 1833?

caving in of the river banks, and by the water making deep channels through lands never known to have been overflowed before; and much loss was sustained by the drowning of cattle and stock. In all, the river rose thirty feet, and the water stood fifteen feet high on trees in the bottoms. By the 26th of June the water had fallen twelve feet, and continued to recede until it reached the usual stage again. No such rise has ever been known in the history of the river before or since. It was two feet and six inches higher than the highest point ever reached before that date.

**5. New Counties.** The Legislature which assembled in the Autumn of 1833 devoted its labors largely to the formation of new counties, creating seven in all—to-wit: the counties of Mississippi, Carroll, Pike, Greene, Scott, Van Buren and Johnson.

**MISSISSIPPI COUNTY**, the twenty-fifth county created, was formed November 1st, 1833, out of territory taken from Crittenden County, and took its name from the great river that it lies along. The seat of justice was established at the house of Peter G. Reeves, but in 1836 was located at Osceola, where it now is. Mississippi County is an extreme northeast county, bounded north by Missouri and east by the Mississippi River. Osceola is its chief town.

**6. Carroll County**, the twenty-sixth county created, was formed November 1st, 1833, and is believed to have been named in honor of Charles Carroll of Carrollton, who had been the last surviving signer of the Declaration of Independence, and whose death had occurred a short while before. It was formed out of territory taken from the county of Izard. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of William Sneed, Jr., and in 1834 was located at Carrollton. It remained here until 1876, when it was moved to

---

5.—Mississippi County—when formed? Number? From what county taken? From what named? Seat of justice? Situation?

6.—Carroll County—when formed? Number? From what county taken? For whom named? Where is the seat of justice? Situation? Chief town?

Berryville, where it now is. Carroll is a northwestern border county, bounded north by the Missouri line and west by Benton County, which alone separates it from the Indian Territory. Its chief town is Eureka Springs, which has, in a few years, become a famous watering place, on account of the wonderful curative properties of the waters at the place.

**7. Pike County**, the twenty-seventh county created, was formed November 1st, 1833, out of territory taken from the counties of Hempstead and Clark, and was named in honor of General Zebulon Montgomery Pike, a distinguished officer of the War of 1812, killed at the Battle of York in 1813, who, it has been mentioned, conducted an exploring expedition into the interior of the Louisiana purchase in 1806-1807; a detachment of which expedition explored the Arkansas River in 1807, making the first official exploration of the river after the country became the property of the United States. The seat of justice of the county was established at the house of Paschal C. Sorrells, but in 1834 was located at Murfreesboro, where it now is. Pike is an interior southwestern county, and Murfreesboro, which was founded in 1834, when it became the county seat, is its principal town.

**8. Greene County**, the twenty-eighth county created, was formed November 6th, 1833, out of territory taken from Lawrence County. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of Benjamin Crowley, and was next located at Paris, five miles northeast of the present town of Gainesville. This remained the county seat until 1847 or 1848, when it was located at Gainesville, and remained there until 1884, when it was moved to Paragould, where it now is. Greene is an extreme northeastern county, lying along the St. Francis River, which alone separates

---

7.—Pike County—when formed? Number? From what county taken? For whom named? The county seat? Situation?

8.—Greene County—when formed? Number? From what county taken? County seat? Situation? Chief town? When founded? How name derived?

it from Missouri on the east, while only Clay County separates it from Missouri on the north. Paragould is its principal town, but Gainesville is also a place of importance. Paragould was founded in 1881, when the railroad was built there, and its name is compounded of parts of the names of two prominent railroad men—to-wit: J. W. *Paramore*, the president of the company building the narrow-gauge road first reaching the place, and Jay *Gould*, the great railroad magnate.

**9. Scott County**, the twenty-ninth county created, was established November 5th, 1833, out of territory taken from the counties of Crawford and Pope, and was named in honor of Judge Andrew Scott. The county seat was located in 1834 at Cauthron, but was moved to Waldron, where it now is. Scott County is a western border county, lying along the Indian boundary line, and Waldron is its chief town.

**10. Van Buren County**, the thirtieth county created, was formed November 11th, 1833, out of territory taken from the counties of Conway, Izard and Independence, and received its name from Martin Van Buren, the Secretary of State under President Jackson, and who was afterwards President. The seat of justice was at the house of Nobadiah Marsh until 1834, when it was established at Bloomington, on Little Red River, eight miles east of Clinton, where it remained until 1844, when the county seat was moved to Clinton, where it now is. Van Buren is an interior northern county, and Clinton, which was founded in 1842, is its chief town.

**11. Johnson County**, the thirty-first county created, was formed November 16th, 1833, out of territory taken from Pope

---

**9.**—Scott County—when formed? From what county taken? For whom named? County seat? Situation?

**10.**—Van Buren County—when formed? From what counties taken? For whom named? Seat of justice? Situation? Chief town?

**11.**—Johnson County—when formed? From what county taken? For

County, and was named in honor of Judge Benjamin Johnson. The seat of justice was established at the house of Elijah B. Alston, and so remained until 1836, when it was located at Clarksville, where it now is. Johnson County is an interior county northwest, and lies along the Arkansas River, which is its southern border. The county is particularly rich in coal, and is traversed from east to west by the Little Rock and Fort Smith Railroad which follows the river. Clarksville, on the railroad, is its chief town.

## CHAPTER XII.

### *1833 to 1836—Admission into the Union.*

**1. Improvement of the Rivers.** Among the many favors which Congress granted to the Territory of Arkansas, was a liberal appropriation of money, to assist in improving the condition of her rivers. In January, 1834, Captain H. M. Shreve, the inventor of snagboats, was sent to the Arkansas River to engage in the work of removing snags therefrom. After doing a great work in the Arkansas River, he was transferred to Red River, and assigned to the duty of removing, as far as possible, the obstruction of the Raft.

**2. William S. Fulton, Governor.** On the 23d of February, 1835, President Jackson appointed Secretary William Savin Fulton Governor of the Territory, to succeed Governor John Pope, and appointed Lewis Randolph, a grandson of Thomas Jefferson, Secretary. Governor Fulton was born in Cecil County, Maryland, June 2d, 1795; came to Arkansas, upon being appointed Secretary, in April, 1829, from Florence, Alabama, where he

---

whom named? County seat? Situation? Productions? Chief town?

CHAPTER XII. 1.—What was done in 1834 toward the improvement of the rivers?

2.—Who was appointed Governor to succeed Governor Pope? Who Secretary? Give an account of Governor Fulton.

resided. He served as Secretary until February, 1835; when, being appointed Governor, he served until 1836, when the Territory was admitted into the Union as a State. He was then elected United States Senator, and served as such until his death. He died at his family residence at Little Rock, August 15th, 1844, in the 50th year of his age.

**3. White County.** At the session of the Legislature in the Autumn of 1835 there were four new counties created—to-wit: the counties of White, Randolph, Saline, and what is now called Marion County. White County, the thirty-second county created, was formed October 23d, 1835, out of parts of the counties of Pulaski, Independence and Jackson, and received its name from White River, which bounds it on the east. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of David Crease, and in 1837 the county seat was located at Searcy, where it now is. White is an interior central county. Searcy is its chief town a place of considerable importance, being one of the noted watering places of the State, from the excellence of the sulphur and other mineral springs, there and in the vicinity.

**4. Randolph County,** the thirty-third county created, was formed October 29th, 1835, out of territory taken from Lawrence County, and was named in honor of John Randolph of Roanoke. The temporary seat of justice was located at the house of James G. Russell. Commissioners being appointed to establish the permanent county seat, located it at a place called Bettis' Bluff, on Black River, where, in February, 1836, a town was laid off, called Pocahontas, which has since remained the county seat. Randolph

---

**3**—What counties were formed at the session of the Legislature of 1835? White County—when formed? From what counties taken? Number? From what named? County seat? Situation? Chief town? For what is the town noted?

**4**.—Randolph County—when formed? From what county taken? Number? For whom named? County seat? When and where located? Town founded? Situation of county?



is a northeast border county, lying along the Missouri line, and Poca-hontas is its chief town.

5. **Saline County**, the thirty-fourth county created, was established November 2d, 1835, out of territory taken from Pulaski County, and took its name from the Saline River, which runs through it. The temporary seat of justice was established "at the Baptist meeting-house, near Duncan's," but in May, 1836, was established at Benton, which was, at that date, laid out as a town, and which has since remained the county seat. Saline is an interior central county. Benton is the principal town.

6. **Marion County**. The county which is now called Marion, the thirty-fifth county created, was formed November 3d, 1835, out of territory taken from Izard County. The petition of citizens praying for its formation requested that it might be given the name of Marion County, but instead the Legislature gave it the name of Searcy County, in honor of Judge Richard Searcy, and by this name it was known for nearly a year. But the change in name did not prove satisfactory to the petitioners, and at the next meeting of the Legislature, September 9th, 1836, the name was changed to MARION COUNTY, being in honor of General Francis Marion. A county called Searcy was formed later—to-wit: December 13th, 1838. The town of Yellville was made, and is now, the county seat. Marion is a northern border county, the Missouri State line being its northern boundary, and Yellville is its principal town.

7. **Proceedings for Admission into the Union**. The events of this time about which the most interest centered, was a movement looking to the Territory being admitted into the Union as a State. The subject had been agitated in 1831, but at that time

5.—Saline County—when formed? From what county taken? Number? From what named? County seat? When town founded? Situation?

6.—Marion County—its original name? Why changed to Marion? When created? Number? From what county taken? County seat? Situation?

7.—What was the sentiment of the people relative to admission into the

the general sentiment of the people was against it, as their numbers were small, and the condition of public affairs was unsuitable. But considerable advances had been made in four years, and by 1835 the sentiment of the people was now largely in favor of it. A Constitutional Convention was called by the Legislature, to frame a Constitution and petition Congress for admission. The population of the State at that time was given at "exceeding 47,700."

**8. The Convention.** The Convention met January 4th, 1836. John Wilson of Clark County was made President, and Charles P. Bertrand of Little Rock, Secretary. A Constitution was framed and was forwarded to Washington to be laid before Congress. A considerable delay ensued in the transmission of the document. Colonel Sevier, the delegate in Congress, waiting impatiently for the arrival of the instrument, received a copy of the *Gazette*, with the Constitution printed in it as an extra or supplement. He at once laid this extra before Congress as the Constitution, to be considered in that shape, and when the real instrument should arrive, to substitute it for the newspaper copy.

**9. Admission into the Union.** When the matter was presented before Congress great opposition was made to the admission of the Territory. The ground of the objection was that the State proposed to allow slavery to exist in its limits. This opposition to her admission had been active for two years. In 1834 Colonel Sevier had presented a Bill in Congress for her admission, but the passage of the Bill had been delayed until now. Upon the

---

Union? What steps were taken to secure it? What was the population of the State at the time?

**8.**—When did the constitutional convention assemble? Who were its officers? What proceedings took place in the formation of a Constitution and the presentation of it before Congress?

**9.**—How was the petition for admission received by Congress? What proceedings took place thereon? When was the Bill for her admission passed, and when was it approved by the President? What other State was admitted at the same time?

presentation of the Constitution the opposition arose stronger than ever. The act of the people was declared to be revolutionary, in that they had formed a Constitution and petitioned for admission, without first obtaining the consent of Congress to do so. This opposition was even carried to the extent of taking the opinion of the Attorney-General, Benjamin F. Butler, as to whether it was legal or not. Mr. Butler gave his opinion that it was the right of the people at all times peaceably to assemble, and by petition to make any request of Congress that they saw fit; that the holding of the Convention was nothing more than their peaceably assembling, and their request to be admitted into the Union was nothing more than the exercise of their undoubted right to make, by petition, whatever request they chose; and hence there was no illegality in it whatever. After this the Bill for her admission, was passed, June 15th, 1836, and received the signature of the President the next day. At the same time the Bill admitting Michigan, was passed. Thus Arkansas became ONE OF THE UNITED STATES—the twelfth State to be admitted into the American Union, after the formation thereof by the original thirteen colonies.

## REVIEW QUESTIONS.

### (PERIOD II.)

HEADING.—What is this period called, and what time does it embrace? From what incident to what incident?

CHAPTER VI. 1.—When was the Territory of Orleans created? When the District of Louisiana? Of what did each consist? Who was Governor of the District of Louisiana?

2.—When was the Territory of Louisiana created? Out of what? Who was made Governor?

3.—What were the Districts of New Madrid and Arkansas?

4.—What explorations of the new country were made? What was the first exploration of the Arkansas River after the Louisiana purchase, and by whom?

5.—Who was the next Governor of Missouri Territory. What treaty was made in his term?

6.—Who was the next Governor of Missouri Territory, and how long did he serve?

7.—What great convulsion of Nature occurred in Missouri Territory? Where and when? In what manner was Arkansas affected by it?

8.—When was Missouri Territory formed? From what is the name derived, and what does it mean?

9.—What proceedings took place in the organization of Missouri Territory?

CHAPTER VII. 1.—What is said of the formation of Arkansas County?

2.—How early is the town of Arkansas Post believed to have been settled? Give account of its early settlement?

3.—When was a postoffice established there, and under whom?

4.—What is said of Lawrence County?

5.—Give an account of the first treaty with the Quapaw Indians.

6.—When were the counties of Pulaski, Clark and Hempstead formed, and for whom named?

7.—What is said of Pulaski County?

8.—Of the city of Little Rock?

9.—When and by whom laid out as a town? Its first name? The title?

10.—Of Clark County?

11.—Of Hempstead County?

12.—Of the formation of the Territory of Arkansas? Its boundaries?

13.—Who was appointed Governor, and who Secretary? What is said of each?

### (PERIOD III).

HEADING.—What time is covered by this period? From what incident to what incident?

CHAPTER VIII. 1.—Who organized the Territory of Arkansas? What is said of Governor James Miller?

2.—What difficulties were experienced in organizing the Territory?

3.—Who composed the first Legislature? When did it sit, and what officers were appointed in the Territory? Who was the first delegate to Congress?

4.—At what date, where and by whom was the first newspaper established in Arkansas? Relate particulars as to it. How long was it published there? When moved to Little Rock? The first issue at the latter place?

5.—At what date was the Territorial Capital established at Little Rock?

6.—What is said of Miller County?

7.—Of Phillips County?

8.—Of Crawford County?

9.—Of Independence County?

10.—When and by whom was the northern boundary line surveyed?

Relate particulars.

11.—What is said of Chicot County?

12.—Relate particulars of the second treaty with the Quapaw Indians.

CHAPTER IX. 1.—Who succeeded Governor Miller as Governor? Who was he?

2.—What is said of Conway County?

3.—Of Crittenden County?

4.—Of Izard County?

5.—Of the County of Loveley?

6.—Of St. Francis County?

7.—Of Lafayette County?

8.—Who became delegate in Congress after Henry W. Conway? Give an account of his services.

9.—When did the first steamboat ascend the Arkansas River? What was her name? Her commander? Give an account of him. What is said of steamboat journeys of those days? When was White River first navigated?

10.—Relate particulars of the second treaty with the Cherokees?

11.—What is said of Sevier County?

12.—Of Washington County?

CHAPTER X. 1.—Who succeeded Governor Izard as Governor, and when? Who succeeded Robert Crittenden as Secretary? Give an account of Mr. Crittenden.

2.—What is said of Governor Pope?

3.—What public improvements did he conduct?

4.—Relate what is said of accommodations for public offices.

5.—What is said of Pope County?

6.—Of Union County?

7.—Of Hot Spring County?

8.—Of Monroe County?

9.—Of Jefferson County?

10.—Of Jackson County?

CHAPTER XI. 1.—What is said of the steamboat business of 1830?

2.—When and by whom was the southern boundary line of the State surveyed? Relate particulars.

3.—What is stated as to emigration of Indians in 1832?

4.—What is said of the great freshet of 1833?

5.—What is said of Mississippi County?

6.—Of Carroll County?

7.—Of Pike County?

8.—Of Greene County?

9.—Of Scott County.

10.—Of Van Buren County?

11.—Of Johnson County?

CHAPTER XII. 1.—When was the first improvement of the rivers of Arkansas? By whom made?

2.—Who succeeded Governor Pope as Governor? When? Who became Secretary? Give an account of Governor Fulton.

3.—Give an account of White County.

4.—Of Randolph County.

5.—Of Saline County.

6.—Of Marion County.

7.—State the proceedings looking to admission into the Union.

8.—Give an account of the Constitutional Convention and the Constitution.

9.—What took place on the matter being laid before Congress? At what date was the Territory admitted as a State? What Territory was admitted at the same date?

## IV.—THE ANTE-BELLUM PERIOD.

*FROM 1836, THE DATE OF ADMISSION AS A STATE, TO 1861, THE DATE OF THE CIVIL WAR.*

### CHAPTER XIII.

*1836—The Administration of Governor James S. Conway.*

1. **James S. Conway, First Governor of the State.** Being admitted into the Union as a State made it necessary that there should be a general election of officers. At the election which was held in August, 1836, James Sevier Conway, at that time a resident of Hot Spring County, was elected Governor, and was therefore the first Governor of the State. He was born in Greene County, Tennessee, December 5th, 1796, son of Thomas and Ann Conway; the second of seven sons, all of whom became distinguished men. In 1816 he emigrated to St. Louis, Missouri, and from there came to Arkansas on a surveying expedition, in 1820, and in 1823 came to the Territory to live; and settled on a farm on Red River, in Lafayette County. In 1825 he surveyed the western boundary line of the Territory, and in 1831 surveyed the southern boundary, as has been stated. In 1832, on the creation of the office, he became Surveyor-General of the Territory, and was in the discharge of its duties up to the time he was elected Governor. He served as Governor one term of four years, ending in 1840. He died at Walnut Hills, Lafayette County, March 3d, 1855, in the 59th year of his age.

At the election for Congressman, Archibald Yell was elected Representative in Congress, and when the Legislature assembled Ambrose H. Sevier and William S. Fulton were elected United States Senators. All other necessary State and county officers being likewise elected, the State began its career with a full complement of officials for its government.

---

HEADING.—What time is covered by this period? From what incident to what incident?



JAMES S. CONWAY—FIRST GOVERNOR OF THE STATE OF ARKANSAS.

2. **Madison County.** The Legislature which convened in September, besides transacting much business necessary for the beginning of the State's career, created two new counties—to-wit: the counties of Madison and Benton.

---

CHAPTER XIII— 1.—Who was the first Governor of the State? Give an account of him?

2.—What were the two next counties created? What is said of Madison County?



Madison County, the thirty-sixth county created, was formed September 30th, 1836, out of territory taken from Washington County, and was named after President James Madison. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of John Saunders, where it remained until July 22d, 1839, when the county seat was located at Huntsville, the chief town, where it now is. Madison County is a northwest county, separated from Missouri by Carroll County, and from the Indian Territory by Washington County. Huntsville was laid out as a town on becoming the county seat, July 22d, 1839.

**3. Benton County**, the thirty-seventh county created, was formed September 30th, 1836, out of territory taken from Washington County, and was named in honor of Missouri's greatest statesman, Thomas H. Benton, who, at all times, proved himself to be a good friend to Arkansas. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of George P. Wallace, and in 1837 was established at Bentonville, where it now is. Bentonville is one of the thriving and important cities of the northwest, dating its existence from 1837, when it became the county seat. Benton is the extreme northwest corner of the State, having the Missouri line for its northern boundary, and the Indian Territory for its western border.

**4. Banks.** At the first session of the Legislature under the State Government certain important financial matters occupied the attention of the assembly. With the view of providing a circulating medium among the people, and relieving the financial stringency resulting from the fact that many persons owned lands, while but few had ready money, the Legislature chartered two banks, known respectively as the STATE BANK and the REAL ESTATE BANK. The State Bank was a State institution, owned

---

3.—Of Benton County?

4—What two Banks were chartered by the Legislature? How was the State Bank operated?

exclusively by the State, and with officers appointed by the Legislature. The capital stock was put at one million dollars, and the State issued to the bank one thousand bonds of the denomination of one thousand dollars each, which the bank sold; the proceeds of which were to constitute the banking capital.

**5. The State Bank.** The principal bank was at Little Rock, with Major Jacob Brown of the United States Army as president, but branches were established at Fayetteville, Batesville and Arkansas Post. They began business in 1837, but in 1842, after a career of five years, the bank failed and was put into liquidation, with liabilities amounting to nearly \$2,000,000, and nominal assets amounting to about the same; but of which assets about one and a half million of dollars was owing by individuals on principal and interest for money borrowed of the bank, and out of which nearly three-quarters of a million was uncollectible. Of the amount owing by the bank the State stood responsible for nearly one million three hundred thousand dollars, being on account of the issue of the bonds to the bank with the interest thereon; for the payment of which the State had pledged her faith and credit, and as to which she now stood in the attitude of an endorser, whose principal has become insolvent, and has left him with the debt to pay.

**6. In Liquidation.** When the State Bank went into liquidation there began a long struggle to convert its assets into money, but much delay and expense and much loss were experienced in the effort, from the inability of debtors to pay and from the failure of securities; until, by the year 1858, sixteen years after the efforts at collection had been commenced, and after all the assets in the least degree available had been realized, there still remained a deficiency of nearly \$1,200,000, for which the State stood responsible as endorser.

---

5.—Give an account of the State Bank.

6.—What progress was made in settling its affairs?

**7. The Real Estate Bank.** The course of affairs with reference to the Real Estate Bank was even more disastrous still. This institution was operated in a manner somewhat similar to the State Bank, but, in some respects, different. Its capital stock was put at \$2,000,000—twice that of the State Bank. For this amount the State issued and delivered to it, two thousand bonds of one thousand dollars each, which were to be sold by the bank at par, and the amounts received from the sale of the bonds, were to constitute the banking capital. A stockholder in the bank could, by being a stockholder, obtain credit to the extent of one-half of the amount of his stock, and any person, whether he was a stockholder or not, could borrow money from the bank by giving a mortgage on his lands, with ten years time to pay it back. When the books of subscription for stock were opened so great was the desire to subscribe that nearly twice the amount of stock was taken that the law allowed, and it was only by a considerable number of subscribers afterwards withdrawing that the subscriptions could be scaled down to the amount allowed by law. The principal bank was located at the Capital, with John Wilson of Clark County as president, and branches of it were established at Washington, Columbia, Helena and Van Buren.

**8. The Holford Bonds.** The bank at first had some difficulty in selling the bonds on the market, but finally sold five hundred of them to the Secretary of the Treasury of the United States, for the Smithsonian Institute, and one thousand of them to the North American Trust and Banking Company of New York. Having thus secured its capital the bank began business, and in a short while loaned out all of its funds, with mortgages on lands as security for much of it. At the expiration of about a year and a half the bank suspended specie payment, and by the end of four

---

7.—Give an account of the Real Estate Bank.

8.—How were its bonds disposed of? Give the particulars as to the sale of certain of them to James Holford.

years it failed entirely, and made an assignment to trustees, selected from among its directors. Some little time before it failed, finding itself in a pinch to pay the interest on the bonds, which was about to fall due, the bank borrowed money of the North American Trust and Banking Company, and gave as security the five hundred bonds which were in its hands unsold. The bank expected to receive \$250,000 from this borrowing, but in point of fact only received \$121,336. Without waiting for the Real Estate Bank to repay the loan and take up the security, as is the usual course of business in such matters, the North American Trust and Banking Company, in a short while, by a breach of faith, sold the five hundred bonds, left with it as collateral, to James Holford, a banker of London, receiving from him \$325,000. The Trust and Banking Company then itself failed and made an assignment, having made something over \$200,000 by its method of handling the Arkansas bonds. This was a subject which gave much after-trouble, as will be presently explained.

**9. Assignment.** At the time of making the assignment the liabilities of the Bank amounted to nearly \$2,400,000, and their assets nominally amounted to nearly \$2,500,000. Here again began a long effort to convert the assets into money, but with no better success than in the case of the State Bank. Debtors were unable to pay, and, the debts having long time to run, collection could not be forced; men who had mortgaged lands let the lands go for the debts, and the general effect of both banks was to involve thousands of persons in financial disasters and distresses.

**10. Trustees of the Bank.** The management of affairs continued in the hands of the trustees for thirteen years, when, by legal proceedings, it was taken away from them and placed in charge of officers of the court, and the collection of the resources

---

9.—What progress was made in realizing the assets of the bank? .

10.—What proceedings took place with reference to the management of

was pushed as rapidly as possible; but by 1858 the bank still owed nearly \$2,200,000, for the payment of which the available assets only amounted to about \$900,000, leaving a deficiency of nearly \$1,300,000, for which the State stood responsible, by reason of its guaranty of the bonds, or say two and a half millions of dollars on account of both banks.

**11. Funding the Holford Bonds.** The matter of this indebtedness was revived after the Civil War, and, in 1869, the Legislature passed an act allowing these bonds, the disputed "Holford Bonds," as the five hundred were called, which were sold to James Holford by the North American Trust and Banking Company, as well as others, to be "funded" that is surrendered, and new bonds issued for them; and as to the lands mortgaged, the courts, in 1874, made decrees, giving fifteen years to parties to pay them out by annual instalments.

**12. The Fishback Amendment.** With reference to the Holford Bonds, Colonel William M. Fishback of Fort Smith, in the Legislature of 1879, proposed an amendment to the State Constitution, prohibiting the payment of these bonds, as they had been hypothecated, or pledged, contrary to law. The proposed amendment, taking the name of its author, was known as the Fishback Amendment. It was twice voted on by the people. It was defeated at the first election in 1880; but was presented again in 1884, and this time was adopted. It now stands as Amendment No. 1 to the present State Constitution, and by it the payment of the disputed bonds, or interest, is prohibited.

the bank's affairs? For what amount was the State finally made responsible on account of the two banks?

**11.**—What was done toward the funding of the bonds and the payment of mortgages?

**12.**—What is the "Fishback Amendment," and what was the result of it?

**13. First Presidential Vote of Arkansas.** In the Autumn of 1836 occurred the first Presidential election in which Arkansas took part. There were at that time two political parties in the United States, known as the Whig and the Democratic parties. Martin Van Buren of New York was the candidate of the Democratic party, and William Henry Harrison of Ohio the regular candidate of the Whig party. Daniel Webster of Massachusetts was also made a candidate by a portion of the Whig party, and Hugh L. White of Tennessee was an independent candidate for the office. Mr. Van Buren was elected to the position, and became the eighth President of the United States, with Richard M. Johnson as Vice-President. The vote of Arkansas, her first electoral vote cast, was given for the successful candidates.

**14. Political Parties.** The political parties existing in the United States have been as follows: At the time of the Revolutionary War they were called Whigs and Tories; the Whigs representing the Americans, struggling for their independence, and the Tories, those who adhered to, or sympathized with, the British. The Tory party became extinct on the establishment of the independence of the United States. The two parties then became known as Federalists and Anti-Federalists. The Federalists were those who advocated making a Government with strong central powers. They numbered among their membership some of the most prominent and distinguished men of those times, but gradually lost their power among the people. They became extinct as a party after the War of 1812. About the year 1800 the Anti-Federalist party became known as the Republican party, or the party of the people, whose chief exponent was Thomas Jefferson. After a short while they became known as the Democratic party, the word Democrat being a name borrowed from

---

**13.**—What was the first Presidential election in which the State of Arkansas took part? For whom was her first vote cast?

**14.**—Give the review of political parties in the United States to the present time.

French societies, signifying the will of the masses. It is the same which is one of the principal political parties of the present time. After the decline of the Federalist party a division of the Republican or Democratic party took place, in which one of the divisions became known as the National Republicans, and after 1829 were called Whigs, taking the name of the old Revolutionary party. The Whig party continued until after 1850, when it dissolved. About 1840 a party began to be formed in the Northern States, having for its object the abolition of slavery; hence called the Abolition party. It was absorbed, after the year 1854, by a party formed in those States which took the name of the Republican party, the same that is one of the principal parties of the present time. About the same time a party was formed, designed to be composed of native-born American citizens only, to the exclusion of foreigners, and which was called the American party, or "Know Nothing" party, but it was only of short duration. In 1859 and 1860, also, a party was formed called the Constitution and Union party, but which went to pieces in the breaking out of the Civil War. Since the Civil War various national organizations have arisen, such as the "Prohibition" party, designed to prohibit the sale of liquor; the "Equal Rights" party, to give the right of voting to women, and the "Greenback" party, formed in 1875, afterwards called the "Union Labor" party. [See note on next page.]

**15. Men of the Different Political Parties in Arkansas.** The people of Arkansas had no official participation in these parties until she came into the Union as a State, but since that date her people have, at all times, taken part and been identified with them. Of the Whig party in Arkansas, Robert Crittenden was the leader, and Absalom Fowler, Frederick W. Trapnall, Thomas W. Newton, Ben Desha, Albert Pike, Robert C. Oden, William Cummins and others were prominent members. Of the Democrats, Henry W. Conway and Ambrose H. Sevier, in their respective times, were early leaders, and with them

Chester Ashley, William E. Woodruff, James and Elias N. Conway, Robert W. Johnson, Solon Borland, Thomas C. Hindman, Augustus H. Garland, Robert C. Newton, James K. Jones, Clifton R. Breckinridge, Simon P. Hughes and others have been prominent members of the party. The Republican party did not exist in Arkansas until after the war, and was in power in the State from 1868 to 1874, Powell Clayton being the leader of the party in the State, and O. A. Hadley, John McClure, Elisha Baxter, B. F. Rice, Joseph Brooks and others being prominent members of it.

NOTE.—The following is a list of Presidents of the United States elected by the various political parties—to-wit:

YEAR OF QUALIFICATION.	NAME.	FROM.	BY WHAT PARTY ELECTED.	TERM OF OFFICE.
1789	George Washington	Virginia	Federalist	4 years.
1797	John Adams	Massachusetts	Federalist	4 years.
1801	Thomas Jefferson	Virginia	Democratic	8 years.
1809	James Madison	Virginia	Democratic	8 years.
1817	James Monroe	Virginia	Democratic	8 years.
1821	John Quincy Adams	Massachusetts	Democratic	4 years.
1829	Andrew Jackson	Tennessee	Democratic	8 years.
1837	Martin Van Buren	New York	Democratic	4 years.
1841	Wm. Henry Harrison*	Ohio	Whig	1 month.
1841	John Tyler	Virginia	Whig	3 years, 11 months.
1845	James K. Polk	Tennessee	Democratic	4 years.
1849	Zachary Taylor	Louisiana	Whig	1 year, 4 mos., 5 dys.
1850	Millard Fillmore	New York	Whig	2 yrs., 10 ms., 20 dys.
1853	Franklin Pierce	New Hampshire	Democratic	4 years.
1857	James Buchanan	Pennsylvania	Democratic	4 years.
1861	Abraham Lincoln†	Illinois	Republican	4 yrs., 1 mo., 10 dys.
1865	Andrew Johnson	Tennessee	Republican	3 yrs., 10 ms., 20 dys.
1869	Ulysses S. Grant	Illinois	Republican	8 years.
1877	Rutherford B. Hayes	Ohio	Republican	4 years.
1881	James A. Garfield**	Ohio	Republican	7 months, 12 days.
1881	Chester A. Arthur	New York	Republican	3 yrs., 5 ms., 15 dys.
1885	Grover Cleveland	New York	Democratic	4 years.
1889	Benjamin Harrison	Indiana	Republican	

\*Died in office April 4, 1841, when Vice-President Tyler succeeded him.

†Died in office July 7, 1865, when Vice-President Fillmore succeeded him.

‡Died in office April 14, 1865, when Vice-President Johnson succeeded him.

\*\*Died in office September 19, 1881, when Vice-President Arthur succeeded him.

15.—What connection have the people of Arkansas had with these political parties? Mention some of those who have been prominent in the several parties in Arkansas.



## CHAPTER XIV.

*1837 to 1840—The Administration of Governor James S. Conway [Continued].*

**1. Franklin County.** An extra session of the Legislature was held in November of 1837, at which two new counties were created. They were the counties of Franklin and Poinsett. Franklin County, the thirty-eighth county created, was formed December 19th, 1837, out of territory taken from Crawford County, and was named after the printer-philosopher, Benjamin Franklin. The county seat was established at Ozark, where it has since remained. Franklin is a northwest county, lying along the Arkansas River, which is its southern boundary, and Ozark is its chief town and a place of importance.

**2. Poinsett County,** the thirty-ninth county created, was formed February 28th, 1838, out of territory taken from the counties of Greene and St. Francis, and was named after Joel R. Poinsett of South Carolina, Secretary of War under President Van Buren. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of William Harris. The county seat was located at a place called Bolivar, where it remained until the Winter of 1856-1857, when it was moved to Harrisburgh, where it now is. Poinsett is an interior county, northeast; and Harrisburgh, which was founded September, 1856, is its chief town.

**3. Desha County,** the fortieth county created, was formed at a succeeding session of the Legislature, December 12th, 1838, out of territory taken from Arkansas County, and was named after Captain Ben Desha, a prominent citizen of the earlier times of the Territory, and a native of Kentucky, who had been a gallant officer in the War of 1812. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of William Sexton, on the Arkansas

---

CHAPTER XIV. 1.—What is said of Franklin County?

2.—Of Poinsett County?

3.—Of Desha County?

River. Afterwards the town of Napoleon was made the county seat, and remained such until October, 1874, when the seat of justice was moved to Watson. Watson remained the county seat until December, 1880, when the seat of justice was moved to Arkansas City, where it now is. Desha is a southeastern county, lying along the Mississippi River. Arkansas City is its chief town and a place of considerable importance, having a large shipping interest. It was founded in 1873. The town of Napoleon, the first county seat, settled about the year 1833, was once a town of importance, being a great shipping point; its wharfboat and steamboat traffic aggregating large amounts annually. The United States Government built a fine Marine Hospital at the place at a cost of \$55,000, but, owing to the caving in of the river's banks, the building and, from time to time, the entire town tumbled into the river, and has been completely swept away.

**4. Searcy County**, the forty-first county created, was formed December 13th, 1838, out of territory taken from the county of Marion, and was named in honor of Judge Richard Searcy of Batesville, one of the pioneers in the Territory of the year 1820. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of James Eagan, and the county seat was located at Lebanon, five miles west of Marshall, but in 1856 was moved to Marshall, where it now is. Searcy is an interior county, north of centre, separated from Missouri by Marion County. Marshall, which was founded in 1856, is its chief town.

**5. Boundary Line Between Arkansas and Texas.** In the Spring of 1840 the boundary line between Arkansas and the Republic of Texas was surveyed from the thirty-third degree of latitude, or northern boundary line of Louisiana, due north to Red River. Dr. John R. Conway, a brother of Governor James S. Con-

---

4.—Of Searcy County?

5.—When and by whom was the boundary line between Arkansas and Texas surveyed? What was the effect of the survey?

way, was the commissioner making the survey on the part of the State of Arkansas. By this survey the greater part of Miller County, which had previously been supposed to be in Arkansas, and where Arkansas judges had held courts since the establishment of the county, fell within the limits of the Republic of Texas. The line, as established by the commissioners, is the same as that which now stands as the boundary line between the two States.

**6. Archibald Yell, Second Governor.** In 1840 the second election for Governor took place, and Archibald Yell, who had served as Congressman, was elected to the position. He was born in North Carolina in August, 1797, but when young emigrated to Tennessee, and located at Shelbyville. He came to Arkansas from Shelbyville in January, 1831, having in the previous December been appointed Receiver of Public Moneys of the Little Rock Land District. He resigned this office in the latter part of 1832, and from 1833 practiced law at Little Rock. In 1835 he was appointed Judge of the Superior or United States Court of the Territory. In 1836, on the admission of the State into the Union, he was elected to Congress and served to 1840. Being elected Governor in 1840 he served



ARCHIBALD YELL, SECOND GOVERNOR OF THE STATE.

---

6.—Who was the second Governor of Arkansas? Give an account of him,

as such one term, to 1844, when he was again elected to Congress. In 1846, when serving in Congress, the Mexican War broke out, and, resigning his seat in Congress, he went to the war as Colonel of a regiment of Arkansas cavalry. He was killed at the battle of Buena Vista (*Bway-nah Vees'-tah*), February 23d, 1847. He was buried on the field where he fell, but afterwards his body was brought home and was buried at Fayetteville, the place of his residence, where it now rests.

7. **Yell County**, the forty-second county created, was formed by the Legislature, December 5th, 1840, out of territory taken from the counties of Scott and Pope, and was named in honor of Governor Archibald Yell. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of William H. Pevy until otherwise provided. This county has practically two county seats—Danville, founded in October, 1841, and Dardanelle. Courts are held at both places, but the county records are at Danville, which is the county seat proper. Yell is an interior western county, lying along and south of the Arkansas River. Dardanelle, on the river, is its chief town, and is a place of importance and business activity.

8. **Bradley County**, the forty-third county created, was formed December 18th, 1840, out of territory taken from Union County, and was named for Captain Hugh Bradley, at whose house the temporary seat of justice was established. In April, 1843, the county seat was located at Warren, where it has since remained. Bradley is an interior southern county, separated from Louisiana by the counties of Ashley and Union. Warren, founded in 1841, is its chief town.

9. **Perry County**, the forty-fourth county created, was formed December 18th, 1840, out of territory taken from Conway County,

---

7.—What is said of Yell County?

8.—Of Bradley County?

9.—Of Perry County?

and was named in honor of Commodore Oliver Hazard Perry, the naval hero of the War of 1812. The law for its creation, when first introduced, proposed that its name should be Lafave County, but when the bill was being considered in the Legislature the name was changed to Perry County. The temporary seat of justice was located at the house of John L. Houston, and in 1841 the county seat was established at Perryville, where it has since remained. Perry County is a central county, lying along and south of, the Arkansas River; west of Pulaski County, and touching it. Perryville, founded in 1840, is its chief town.

**10. William Henry Harrison, President.** In the Autumn of the year 1840 an election for President was held, at which Van Buren and Johnson were the candidates of the Democrats and William Henry Harrison and John Tyler those of the Whigs. In the campaign which ensued, which was remarkable for the degree of enthusiasm it created throughout the country, the Whig candidates, Harrison and Tyler, were elected by a great majority. The electoral vote of Arkansas was given for Van Buren as before. General Harrison, who was the ninth President of the United States, died within a month after he was inaugurated, and the government was administered for the remainder of the term by Mr. Tyler as President. This is the first instance in American history in which the Vice-President was called to serve in the Presidency.

**11. Census.** In the Government census of the year, the sixth census, the population of Arkansas was 97,574, a gain of 67,186 in ten years.

During this year, also, the United States Government commenced the construction of two forts or arsenals in Arkansas; one at Little Rock and the other at Fort Smith. At the latter place

---

10.—Who was elected President of the United States in 1840? Who were the candidates, and for whom was the electoral vote of Arkansas cast?

a new fort was built at or near the site of the old one, the building being of stone, with barracks sufficient for four companies. The one at Little Rock is still used for the purpose, but the one at Fort Smith has been abandoned for use as a fort, being converted to use as a Federal Courthouse, and for a time was used as such, until the Government built a handsome courthouse for the purpose.

## CHAPTER XV.

*1840 to 1846—The Administration of Governors Archibald Yell and Samuel Adams, and part of that of Governor Thomas S. Drew.*

**1. New Counties.** In the particular period of the State's history now being treated of, there was little that occurred needing to be recounted, except the formation of counties. At the session of the Legislature in the Autumn of 1842 four were created—to-wit: the counties of Ouachita, Montgomery, Newton and Fulton. This Legislature also made two important enactments, which afterwards became of great and particular service to the State. One was to provide for a geological survey of the State, which was afterwards made, in 1856-1858, by Dr. David Dale Owen, an eminent geologist, a second survey being made by him 1859-1860; and the other was establishing a system of free common schools.

**2. Ouachita County,** the forty-fifth county created, was formed by the Legislature, November 29th, 1842, out of territory taken from the county of Union, and took its name from the Ouachita River, which forms a part of its eastern boundary. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of William L. Bradley, and in the following year was established at Camden, where it now is.

---

**11.**—What was the population of Arkansas in the sixth census? What arsenals were built in Arkansas in 1840?

CHAPTER XV. **1.**—Name some important measures adopted by the Legislature of 1842.

**2.**—What is said of Ouachita County?

Ouachita is an interior southern county, separated from Louisiana by the counties of Union and Columbia. Camden is its chief town, and is the most important city in that part of the State. It had its origin in a settlement made in early times by a Frenchman named Fabré (*Fah-bray*), his place of location being called Écore à Fabré (*A-core ah Fah-bray*), or Fabré's Bluff.

**3. Montgomery County**, the forty-sixth county created, was formed December 9th, 1842, out of territory taken from Hot Spring County. The county seat, from the time of the organization of the county, has been at the present town of Mount Ida. The town, however, was called by the name of Montgomery at first. In July, 1850, the county court changed the name to Salem, and in October of the same year changed it to Mount Ida, which it now bears. Montgomery is an interior county, west; separated from the Indian Territory by Polk County, and Mount Ida is its principal town.

**4. Newton County**, the forty-seventh county created, was formed December 14th, 1842, out of territory taken from the county of Carroll, and was named in honor of Thomas W. Newton, an early resident, who came to Arkansas Post in 1819, from Alexandria, Virginia, and afterwards became one of the prominent men of the Territory. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of John Bellah, on "Hutson's Fork of Buffalo." Afterwards the county seat was located at the town of Jasper, where it now is. Newton County is an interior county, north; separated from Missouri by Boone County, and Jasper is its principal town.

**5. Fulton County**, the forty-eighth county created, was formed December 21st, 1842, out of territory taken from Izard County, and was named after Governor William Savin Fulton. The tem-

---

**3.**—Of Montgomery County?

**4.**—Of Newton County?

**5.**—Of Fulton County?

porary seat of justice was established at the house of Peter Ground, and in 1842 the county seat was located at Salem, where it now is. Fulton County is a northern border county, lying along the Missouri line, and Salem, which was founded in 1843, is the chief town.

**6. Samuel Adams, Acting Governor.** In the month of April, 1844, Governor Archibald Yell resigned the office of Governor, and became a candidate for Congress, to which he was elected in August. Upon his resignation Samuel Adams of Johnson County, who was President of the Senate and the next officer in

rank, became Acting Governor, and discharged the duties of the office from April to November; when Thomas S. Drew, his successor, who had been elected in August, was inaugurated before the Legislature, and entered upon the discharge of his duties. Governor Adams was born in Halifax County, Virginia, June 5th, 1805. When a child his father moved to Humphrey County, Tennessee, where the son grew to manhood.

In the Spring of 1835 he moved to Arkansas and settled in Johnson County, where he lived until 1846, when, being elected State Treasurer, he moved to Little Rock. He died while on a visit to his farm in

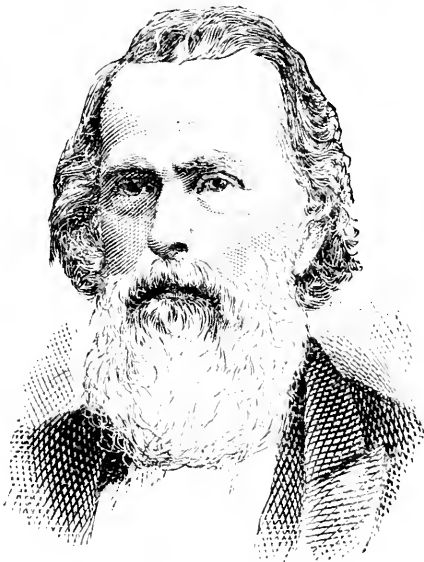
---

**6.**—How and at what date did Samuel Adams become Acting Governor? How long did he serve? Give an account of him.



Saline County, Arkansas, February 27th, 1850, in the forty-fifth year of his age.

7. **Thomas S. Drew, Third Governor.** Governor Thomas S. Drew, who was the third Governor of the State of Arkansas, was born in Vermont about the year 1801, and from there, when a young man, emigrated to Missouri. He came to Arkansas in 1821 or 1822, and settled in Clark County. He afterwards moved to Lawrence County, and was a delegate from that county in the Constitutional Convention of 1836. He then moved to Independence County, and was a resident of that county when he was elected Governor in 1844. He served one term as Governor, and in 1848 was elected a second time; but in January, 1849, resigned the office, serving only a part of his second term. After this he moved from Arkansas and died in Lampasas County, Texas, in 1880, at the advanced age of seventy-nine.



THOMAS S. DREW, THIRD GOVERNOR OF THE STATE

8. **James K. Polk, President.** In the Autumn of the year 1844 a Presidential election took place. The great Henry Clay of Kentucky was the Whig candidate for President, with Theodore Frelinghuysen of New Jersey for Vice-President. James K. Polk

7.—Who was the next Governor? Give an account of him.

8.—What is said of the Presidential election of 1844? At what date and how did Chester Ashley become United States Senator?

of Tennessee, a comparatively unknown man, was named as the Democratic candidate, with George M. Dallas of Pennsylvania for Vice-President. James G. Birney, of Michigan, was the candidate of the Abolition party, their first candidate. Polk and Dallas were elected. The vote of Arkansas was among those given for them in the Electoral College.

In the month of August, 1844, Senator William S. Fulton died, and was succeeded as Senator by Chester Ashley, to serve for the unexpired term. Chester Ashley was an early settler, having come to Arkansas from Missouri about 1820.

**9. Polk County.** At the session of the Legislature following these events, two new counties were created. They were given the names of Polk and Dallas, after the newly-elected National officers.

Polk County, the forty-ninth county created, was formed December 30th, 1844, out of territory taken from Sevier County, and was named after President James K. Polk. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of James Pirtle, at which place there was a postoffice called Panther. The name was shortly afterwards changed to Dallas, and it has since remained the county seat. Polk County is a western border county, lying along the Choctaw boundary line, south of the Arkansas River, and Dallas is its principal town.

**10. Dallas County,** the fiftieth county created, was formed January 1st, 1845, out of territory taken from the counties of Clark and Bradley, and was named after Vice-President George M. Dallas. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of Presley Watts, but in the same month the county seat was established at Princeton, where it has since remained. Dallas is an interior county, southwest of centre, lying along the Ouachita River, which forms a part of its western boundary. Princeton, which was founded in 1845, is its principal town.

---

9.—What is said of Polk County?

10.—Of Dallas County?

## CHAPTER XVI.

*1846 to 1849—In the Administration of Governor Thomas S. Drew. The Mexican War.*

**1. The War with Mexico.** The next matter of public importance, in which the people of Arkansas were concerned, was the war between the United States and Mexico. The immediate cause of this war was the annexation, by the United States, of the Republic of Texas. The United States originally claimed that what is now the State of Texas belonged to them as part of the Louisiana purchase. On the basis of this claim they ceded the country to Spain in 1819, and paid \$5,000,000 besides, in exchange for Florida. In 1821, Mexico, which was under the dominion of Spain and included Texas, threw off the Spanish yoke by means of a successful revolution terminating in that year. In that year also American colonists were for the first time introduced into Texas: the first colony being planted there by Stephen F. Austin, who, it will be remembered, was for a short time a resident of Arkansas Territory, in 1820.

**2. The Texas Revolution.** Austin's colony proving to be successful, a number of other American colonies followed, until, by the year 1835, they had grown so strong in numbers as to incur the jealousy of the Mexican Government on account of their industry, thrift and growing prosperity, and they were treated with great cruelty by their Mexican rulers. This induced the Texans to rise in revolt against Mexico, and in a successful revolution, which was terminated by the battle of San Jacinto, in April, 1836, in which General Sam Houston, the Texan leader, defeated the Mexicans, and made prisoner of their President and Com-

---

CHAPTER XVI. 1.—What was the next matter of public importance in which the people of Arkansas were concerned? Out of what did this war arise? In what manner did the United States first acquire Texas, and in what manner lose it? In what manner did they gain it again? (Verse 3.)

2.—What led to the Texas Revolution, and how was the independence of

mander, General Santa Anna, they established their independence as a Republic, with limits extending to the Rio Grande (*Rec-o-Gran-dee*) River. The existence of the Republic of Texas as an independent Power was speedily recognized by the United States; by England, France and Holland. Mexico did not recognize her by any proceeding of her own *Cortes* or Congress, but when Santa Anna was a prisoner in General Houston's hands, he, with the consent of General Filisola (*Fil-is-o'-la*), who was President in Santa Anna's absence, made a treaty with Houston, as the representative of Texas, by which the independence of Texas was acknowledged, and by means of which Santa Anna and his fellow-captives were released.

**3. The Annexation of Texas.** Having thus established her individual entity as a separate Government, Texas made propositions to the Government of the United States to become one of the States. Being an independent Government she had a right to attach herself to any Government by which she might be received. Her proposal to become one of the States of the American Union dragged along for nine years—to-wit: from 1837 to 1846. The public sentiment of the Union was divided on the subject. The people of the South were generally in favor of her annexation, and the people of the North were generally opposed to it, on the ground that thereby another slave-holding State would be added to the public domain. In that time Mexico had made no attempt to repossess herself of Texas, but had permitted her to go on in her separate existence for ten years' time. The utmost Mexico had done in all this time was to declare, through her representatives, that if the United States annexed Texas it would be regarded by Mexico as a cause of war, as she claimed that Texas belonged

---

Texas secured? By what Powers was she recognized? What were her western limits?

**3.**—What efforts were made by Texas to become annexed to the United States? How were they received? How was annexation finally secured?

to her. Finally, in 1846, a Bill was passed in Congress admitting Texas into the Union, which being accepted by the Texas Congress, she became one of the United States. As soon as this was done President Polk ordered General Zachary Taylor to establish himself on the Texas border, and defend her soil from any invasion from Mexico.

**4. The War Begins.** General Taylor took his position on the Rio Grande River, opposite Matamoras, on the Texas side, whereupon the Mexicans began actual war by the bombardment of Fort Brown, in General Taylor's lines, in which Major Jacob Brown, who, it will be remembered, was the first President of the State Bank of Arkansas, was killed; and by attacking the American troops at other points. Upon this the Congress of the United States, as well as that of Mexico, formally declared war and called for troops. The quota to be furnished by Arkansas was two regiments; one for service on the border, to replace those which had been withdrawn for active service, and the other for service in the field. The volunteers called for in Arkansas were speedily raised; more companies offering to enlist than were authorized to be received.

**5. Organization of the Troops.** The general rendezvous of the troops from Arkansas, going into the field, was at Washington, Hempstead County. Here a regiment of cavalry was formed, and Governor Archibald Yell, of Fayetteville, was made Colonel; John Selden Roane, of Van Buren, Lieutenant-Colonel, and Solon Borland, of Little Rock, Major. It consisted of ten companies, aggregating 820 men, who set out on their march to Mexico. A battalion for the defence of the frontier was also formed, under Lieutenant-Colonel William Gray; and two companies of the Twelfth United States Infantry Regulars were

---

4.—How did the war begin? What troops were required from Arkansas?

5.—What troops were furnished by Arkansas? Of what regiments did they consist? What befell some of them at the Hacienda of Encarnacion?

recruited from Arkansas, one of them being under the command of Captain Allen Wood of Carroll County. The total number of troops furnished by the State of Arkansas in this war was 1400 men.

**6. Battle of Buena Vista.** On arriving at the scene of action Yell's regiment was put at once into active service. In January, 1847, a number of them under Major Borland were made prisoners by cavalry of the Mexican General Minon at the Hacienda of Encarnacion (*En-car-nass'-ce-oan*), and were detained until near the close of the war, being treated with great severity and cruelty. The principal battle of the war was that of Buena Vista (*Bway-nah Vees'-tah*), which was fought February 23d, 1847, in which General Taylor gained a complete victory over the Mexicans, who had much the largest force. In this battle Yell's Regiment was hotly engaged. Colonel Yell was killed, together with Captain Andrew Porter, and a number of the men were either killed or wounded. It was not a great while after this battle until the war ended.

**7. End of the War.** The battle of Buena Vista was the principal engagement in which the Arkansas troops took part, but the Twelfth Infantry, with the company under Captain Allen Wood, were also engaged in the battles of Contreras (*Con-tray'-ras*) and Cherubusco (*Sher-oo-boos'-co*), where they distinguished themselves for gallantry. One immediate result of this war was to add a large portion of territory to the United States, comprising what is now the Territory of New Mexico and the lower part of California. Senator A. H. Sevier resigned his seat in the United States Senate, and was appointed Minister to Mexico at the concluding of peace in 1848. Another result was to add greatly to the prestige of American soldiers for gallantry and valor.

---

6.--What at the battle of Buena Vista?

7.--What were the results of this war?

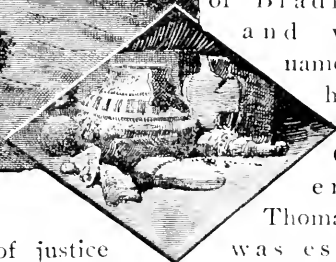
**8. Prairie County.** While these military affairs were in progress certain civil matters took place, which are to be noted. During the Autumn of the year 1846 the Legislature sat, and as part of their labors created the counties of Prairie, Drew and Ashley.

PRAIRIE COUNTY, the fifty-first county created, was formed November 25th, 1846, out of territory taken from Pulaski County; and takes its name from the nature of the country composing a large part of its area, being the prairie land common to the western country. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of Hunt, on the Memphis Road. The county seat was located for a time at Brownsville, and next at Devall's Bluff, where it remained until 1875, but in that year Des Arc was made the county seat, and has since remained such. Prairie County is an interior eastern county, bounded on the east by White River.

**9. Drew County,** the fifty-second county created, was formed



INDIAN MOUNDS, DREW COUNTY.



November 26th, 1846, out of territory taken from the county of Bradley, and was named in honor of Governor Thomas S.

Drew. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of Alexander M. Rawles, and remained there

8.—What is said of Prairie County?

9.—What is said of Drew County?

until 1848, when, upon the formation of Ashley County, which included Rawles' house within its limits, the county seat of Drew County was established at a place called Rough and Ready, one mile south of the present town of Monticello.\* In 1849 the county seat was established at Monticello, where it now is. Drew is a southeastern interior county, not far from the Mississippi River, and Monticello is its chief town.

**10. Ashley County**, the next county created, and fifty-third in number, was formed November 30th, 1848, at the next session of the Legislature, and was named in honor of Senator Chester Ashley. It was formed out of territory taken from the county of Drew. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of Isaac Denson. In October, 1849, a town was laid off by commissioners and called Hamburg, which was made the county seat, and is such now. Ashley County is a southeastern border county, lying along the Louisiana line. Hamburg is its chief town.

**11. Resignation of Governor Drew.** In the latter part of 1848, Governor Drew's first term drawing to a close, he was elected Governor a second time. He was inaugurated before the Legislature in November, 1848, but resigned the office in January, 1849. Upon his resignation, Richard C. Byrd, as President of the Senate, became Acting Governor, and administered the office until his successor, John Selden Roane, was elected and qualified in April, 1849. At this session of the Legislature, also, Major Solon Borland was elected United States Senator, and Senator Chester Ashley having died in April, 1848, while in the discharge of his

---

\*Pronounced in Italian *mon-ti-tshé-lo*.

---

**10.**—What is said of Ashley County?

**11.**—What was the date of Governor Drew's second election? The date of his resignation? Who succeeded him as Acting Governor? State the succession of United States Senatorships of this date.



duties, Judge William K. Sebastian, of Helena, was elected his successor, for the unexpired portion of the term.

**12. Zachary Taylor, President.** The successful issue of the Mexican War had made General Zachary Taylor a popular hero. He was nominated by the Whig party as their candidate for President, with Millard Fillmore of New York for Vice-President. The Democratic candidates were Lewis Cass of Michigan for President, and William O. Butler of Kentucky for Vice-President. Martin Van Buren and Charles Francis Adams were the candidates of the "Free Soil" or Anti-Slavery party. In the election held in November, Taylor and Fillmore were elected. The vote of Arkansas was given for Cass and Butler. President Taylor was inaugurated in 1849, but died in July, 1850, and Vice-President Fillmore administered the affairs of the Government for the remainder of the term.

## CHAPTER XVII.

*1849 to 1861 — The Administration of Governor John Selden Roane; that of Governor Elias N. Conway, two terms; and the Election of Governor Henry M. Rector.*

**1. John Selden Roane, Governor.** The war with Mexico being concluded, the State entered upon a season of peace and prosperity. Upon assuming the duties of Acting Governor, Richard C. Byrd issued his proclamation for a special election for Governor, to be held in April, 1849. At this election JOHN SELDEN ROANE, then of Pine Bluff, was elected Governor, and in a short while assumed the duties of the office. He was the fourth Governor of the State. He was born in Wilson County, Tennessee, January 8th, 1817, and came to Arkansas in 1837, settling

---

**12**—In what Presidential election did the people of Arkansas take part in 1848? Who were the candidates? How long did President Taylor serve?

**CHAPTER XVII. 1.**—What proceedings were instituted by Richard C. Byrd for the election of a Governor? Who was elected? Give a sketch of him.



JOHN SELDEN ROANE, FOURTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE

at Pine Bluff. In 1842 he became a resident of Van Buren, and was living there at the breaking out of the Mexican War, in which he took part as Lieutenant-Colonel of Yell's regiment, and commanded it after the death of Colonel Yell. He served one term as Governor, to November, 1852. He was a Brigadier-General of the Confederate Army in the Civil War of 1861. He died at Pine Bluff, April 7th, 1867, aged fifty years, and is buried in Oakland Cemetery in Little Rock.

2. **Federal Judges.** In the month of October, 1849, Judge Benjamin Johnson, who had been a Federal Judge in Arkansas since 1820, died at his home in Little Rock, and was succeeded as United States District Judge by Daniel Ringo. Judge Ringo served in that position until 1861. In 1851 Congress created a Federal Court for the western district of Arkansas, to be held at Fort Smith.

3. **Population in Seventh Census.** In the year 1850 the seventh census of the United States was taken by the Government authorities. In it the population of Arkansas was 209,897. This was a gain of 112,323 since the previous census of 1840, when the number stood 97,574; being at the average rate of a little above 11,000 per annum.

---

2. — State changes in the Federal judiciary of this date.

3. — What was the population of Arkansas in 1850?

**4. Calhoun County.** The next Legislature which assembled created the counties of Calhoun and Sebastian. CALHOUN COUNTY, the fifty-fourth county created, was formed December 6th, 1850, out of territory taken from the counties of Dallas and Ouachita, and was named in honor of John C. Calhoun of South Carolina. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of James Riggs. In 1851 the county seat was located at Hampton, where it has since remained. Calhoun is a southern interior county, not far from the Louisiana line, and Hampton is the chief town.

**5. Sebastian County,** the fifty-fifth county created, was formed January 6th, 1851, out of territory taken from the counties of Crawford, Scott and Polk, and was named after Senator William K. Sebastian. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of Eaton Tatum. The county seat was located at Greenwood. Two districts were afterwards formed in the county, with separate courts at Greenwood and Fort Smith, the same as if they were separate county seats. The United States Court for the western district of Arkansas is held at Fort Smith. Sebastian is a western county, bounded north by the Arkansas River and west by the Indian Territory. Fort Smith is its chief place, and is a splendid city; the second city in the State in size and population.

**6. Elias N. Conway, Governor.** The term of office of Governor Roane drawing to a close in the year 1852, Elias Nelson Conway was elected his successor, and was inaugurated before the Legislature in November, being the fifth Governor of the State. He was a younger brother of Henry W. Conway, who was delegate to Congress from Arkansas Territory, and of

4.—What is said of Calhoun County?

5.—Of Sebastian County?

6.—Who succeeded Governor Roane as Governor? Give an account of him.



ELIAS NELSON CONWAY, FIFTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE.

Governor James S. Conway, the first Surveyor-General and first Governor of the State. He was born at Greenville, Tennessee, May 17th, 1812, and went with his father first to St. Louis, Missouri, in 1818, and afterwards to Glasgow, Missouri. He came to Arkansas in November, 1833, and settled at Little Rock, where he ever afterwards lived. He was Auditor of the Territory and State of Arkansas from July, 1835, to January, 1849, four terms, or nearly fourteen years. He served two terms as Governor, from

1852 to 1860. He was one of the most laborious and faithful public servants whom the State ever had in its service.

**7. Columbia County.** The Legislature which convened in 1852, as part of its labors, created the county of Columbia, December 17th, 1852, out of territory taken from the counties of Lafayette, Union, Hempstead and Ouachita. It was the fifty-sixth county created. In 1853 the county seat was established at Magnolia, where it has since remained. Columbia is a southwestern county, lying along the Louisiana State line, and separated from Texas by the counties of Lafayette and Miller. Magnolia is its principal town.

---

7.—What is said of Columbia County?

**8. Franklin Pierce, President.** In the Autumn of 1852 a Presidential election occurred. Franklin Pierce of New Hampshire and William R. King of Alabama were the candidates of the Democratic party. General Winfield Scott and William A. Graham of North Carolina were the candidates of the Whigs, and John P. Hale of New Hampshire and George W. Julian of Indiana were those of the "Free Soil" or Anti-Slavery party. In the election, which occurred in November, Pierce and King were elected. The vote of Arkansas was among those cast for them.

**9. Robert W. Johnson, Senator.** In June, 1853, Senator Solon Borland having been appointed Minister to Central America, resigned his senatorship, and Robert W. Johnson was appointed by Governor Conway as his successor, and was subsequently elected for the full term, ending 1861.

**10. Railroads.** In the year 1854 the first operations looking to the building of railroads in the State were put into effect. A survey of the Cairo and Fulton Railroad, now the St. Louis, Iron Mountain and Southern Railroad, the principal railroad in the State, and a part of the great Missouri Pacific system, was made from the Missouri line to Texas; and a company was formed for the building of it, with Roswell Beebe as President. In the same year surveys of the lines of the Little Rock and Fort Smith and of the Memphis and Little Rock Railroads were also made.

**11. Governor Conway's Second Term.** The administration of Governor Elias N. Conway, in the two terms, which he served from 1852 to 1860, was one of prosperity and peace. He was elected a second time in 1856. Nothing arose to disturb the even course of affairs except the excitement incident to matters of national

8.—What President was elected in 1852? For whom was the electoral vote of Arkansas given?

9.—State what change in the United States Senatorship took place at this date.

10.—What matters looking to railroad building took place at this date?

11.—How long did Governor Elias N. Conway serve as Governor?

politics, which were in a disquieted condition. Immigration was coming to the State steadily and constantly; her resources were being brought to light; internal improvements were in progress, and a careful, prudent, economical policy was being pursued in the administration of affairs; so that when Governor Conway passed out of office, he left about \$300,000 in gold and silver in the vaults of the State Treasury. One of the important measures arising during his second term was the establishment of the State School for the Blind, incorporated in 1859, and now in successful operation at the Capital.

**12. James Buchanan, President.** The year 1856 witnessed a Presidential election of unusual interest and excitement. The candidates were James Buchanan of Pennsylvania and John C. Breckinridge of Kentucky of the Democratic party. Millard Fillmore of New York and Andrew J. Donelson of Tennessee were the nominees of the American or "Know Nothing" party; the Anti-Slavery men, now under the name of Republicans, had as their candidates John C. Fremont of California and William L. Dayton of New Jersey. The Whig party had no candidate, their last nominee being General Scott in 1852. In the election, which occurred in November, Buchanan and Breckinridge were elected. The electoral vote of Arkansas was among those given for them.

**13. Craighead County,** the fifty-seventh county created, was formed February 19th, 1859, out of territory taken from the counties of Green, Poinsett and Mississippi, and was named after Thomas B. Craighead, State Senator from Mississippi County. The temporary seat of justice was directed to be at the house of William Puryear. In the next year the county seat was located at Jonesboro, where it has since remained. Craighead is a north-east county, not far from the Missouri line, and Jonesboro is its chief town.

---

What was the condition of public affairs during his two administrations?

**12.—**Who was elected President in 1856? For whom was the electoral vote of Arkansas given?

**13.—**What is said of Craighead County?

**14. Abraham Lincoln, President. Secession of Southern States.** In the year 1860 matters of national politics reached a crisis. The political parties of the country were strangely divided. There were two branches of the Democratic party: one headed by John C. Breckinridge and Joseph Lane; the other headed by Stephen A. Douglas and Herschel V. Johnson. Another party was composed of the former elements of the American party and some of the Whig members, known as the Constitution and Union party, headed by John Bell of Tennessee and Edward Everett of Massachusetts. Opposed to these was the Republican party, which had been growing stronger all the time, having for its candidates Abraham Lincoln of Illinois and Hannibal Hamlin of Maine. In the election, which took place in November, Lincoln and Hamlin were elected. The vote of Arkansas was given for Breckinridge and Lane. Following the election of Mr. Lincoln, various Southern States passed ordinances of secession and withdrew from the Union, as will be presently more fully stated.

**15. Henry M. Rector, Governor.** It was in the midst of the intense excitement existing in this year that an election for Governor of Arkansas was held. Richard H. Johnson was the regular nominee of the Democratic party, but Judge Henry M. Rector became an independent Democratic candidate for the office. Judge Rector was elected, and was inaugurated before the Legislature in November. The total vote cast at this election was 61,198, out of a population of 435,450 in the State, as given by the census of that year. This population was a gain of 225,553 persons, or more than a quarter of a million over the census of 1850. Governor Rector, who was the sixth Governor of Arkansas, was born in St. Louis, Missouri, in 1816. He came to

---

**14.**—Who was elected President in 1860? What candidates were there? For whom was the vote of Arkansas given? What took place upon the election of Mr. Lincoln?

**15.**—Who was elected Governor in 1860? Give an account of him.



HENRY M. RECTOR, SIXTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE

Arkansas in 1835, to look after some landed interests at the famous Hot Springs, which had been left to him on the death of his father, Major Elias Rector. He engaged chiefly in farming, but in 1859 became Judge of the Supreme Court. He resigned his seat on the bench to become a candidate for Governor, and was elected as stated. He served until 1862, when he was succeeded by Harris Flanagin.

**16. Public Improvements.** The year 1858 witnessed the FIRST RAILROAD BUILDING to take place in Arkansas. Work was prosecuted in that year in the building of the Memphis and Little Rock Railroad. A portion was finished from Hopfield, opposite Memphis, to Madison, about forty miles, and from Little Rock a section was finished to Devall's Bluff, forty-five miles, during the years 1859-1860. This latter was used in connection with a line of boats coming from Memphis to Devall's Bluff, until after the war, when about the year 1868 or 1869 the line was completed through to Memphis. In the year 1860 also the FIRST TELEGRAPH LINE in Arkansas was established, and put into effect from Memphis to Little Rock.

---

**16.**—What public improvements are noted as taking place in 1858 to 1860? State the condition of public affairs at the close of this Period.



The close of this Period of twenty-four years' duration, found the country in a state of intense excitement, with business prostrated, trade paralyzed and public affairs pointing to a great convulsion, which soon took place.

## REVIEW QUESTIONS.

### (PERIOD IV.)

HEADING.—What length of time is covered by this Period? From what incident to what incident?

CHAPTER XIII. 1.—Who was the first Governor of the State of Arkansas? The first Representative in Congress? The first Senators?

2.—What is said of Madison County?

3.—Of Benton County?

4.—What financial institutions were chartered by the Legislature?

5-6.—Give an account of the State Bank.

7-10.—Of the Real Estate Bank.

11.—Explain the Holford Bonds.

12.—Explain the Fishback Amendment.

13.—For whom was the first electoral vote of Arkansas cast, and when?

14.—Give an account of the political parties of the United States.

15.—How were the people of Arkansas connected with these parties?

CHAPTER XIV. 1.—What is said of Franklin County?

2.—Of Poinsett County?

3.—Of Desha County?

4.—Of Searcy County?

5.—When and by whom was the boundary line between Arkansas and Texas surveyed? What was the effect of the survey?

6.—Who was the second Governor of Arkansas? When was he elected? Give an account of him.

7.—What is said of Yell County?

8.—Of Bradley County?

9.—Of Perry County?

10.—Who was elected President in 1840? For whom was the vote of Arkansas given?

11.—What was the population of Arkansas in 1840? What Government buildings were erected in Arkansas in this year?

CHAPTER XV. 1.—Mention important acts of the Legislature of 1842.

2.—What is said of Ouachita County?

3.—Of Montgomery County?

4.—Of Newton County?

5.—Of Fulton County?

6.—Who became Acting Governor after Archibald Yell? When and how?

7.—Who was the next Governor? When elected?

8.—Who was elected President in 1844? For whom was the vote of Arkansas cast? What changes in United States Senatorships took place at this date?

9.—What is said of Polk County?

10.—What of Dallas County?

CHAPTER XVI. 1.—What was the next matter of public importance in which the people of Arkansas were concerned? Out of what did this war arise?

2-3.—Give in your own language an account of the manner in which Texas came to be annexed to the United States?

4.—By whom were the first operations of the war commenced, and how? What troops were called for from Arkansas.

5.—Where did the rendezvous of the Arkansas troops take place? What regiments were formed? By whom commanded? What was the full number of troops furnished by Arkansas for this war?

6.—What casualties befell Yell's regiment, and where and how?

7.—In what battles of this war were Arkansas troops engaged? What were the results of the war?

8.—What is said of Prairie County?

9.—Of Drew County?

10.—Of Ashley County?

11.—Who became Governor after Thomas S. Drew, and how?

12.—Who was elected President in 1848? For whom was the vote of Arkansas given?

CHAPTER XVII. 1.—Who was elected the next Governor? How and when? Give an account of him.

2.—What changes took place in the Federal judiciary at this date?

3.—What was the population of Arkansas in 1850? What gain was this over the previous census?

4.—What is said of Calhoun County?

5.—Of Sebastian County?

6.—Who was elected Governor of Arkansas in 1852? Give an account of him.

7.—What is said of Columbia County?

8.—Who was elected President in 1852? Who were the candidates, and for whom was the vote of Arkansas given?

9.—What change in the United States Senatorship took place at this date?

10.—What and when were the first operations in Arkansas looking to the building of railroads?

11.—What was the course of affairs under the administration of Governor Eliás N. Conway? Mention an important measure arising during his second term.

12.—Who was elected President in 1856? Who were the candidates, and for whom was the vote of Arkansas cast?

13.—What is said of Craighead County?

14.—Who was elected President in 1860? What candidates were there? For whom was the vote of Arkansas given? What followed upon the election of Mr. Lincoln?

15.—Who was elected Governor of Arkansas in the year 1860? Give an account of him. What vote was cast at this election? What was the population of the State in 1860?

16.—What was the first railroad and telegraph line built in Arkansas? Give an account of the condition of public affairs at the close of this Period.

## V.—THE PERIOD OF THE CIVIL WAR.

FROM 1861 TO 1865.

---

### CHAPTER XVIII.

*1861—The Beginning of the War.*

**1. Origin of the War.** During these years, which have been under consideration, political matters had gradually so shaped themselves as to end in a terrible war, carried on between the States of the North and those of the South. The difficulty arose out of the existence of slavery in the Southern States. From the foundation of the Government the existence of slavery had been permitted by the Constitution and the laws of the country, and had been recognized by the decisions of the Courts. It had at first existed in New York, Pennsylvania and other Eastern States as well as in the South; but it had gradually been abolished in the eastern States, until it was retained no where in the Union except in the Southern or cotton-producing States. In the progress of time a spirit of opposition to its existence arose in the Northern States, and resulted in the formation of first one political party, and then another, known as Anti-Slavery men, as "Free Soilers," some of the more pronounced in their views and measures, being called Abolitionists.

**2. The Missouri Compromise.** The first definite official opposition to the spread of slave-holding took place in 1820, in

---

CHAPTER XVIII. 1.—What great event took place in 1861? Out of what subject did it arise? Give an account of the subject.

2.—How were the first difficulties over the subject settled? Explain the Missouri compromise.

what was known as the Missouri Compromise. That was this: The Territory of Missouri desired to be admitted into the Union as one of the United States, with laws permitting the existence of slavery within its limits. This was opposed in Congress by delegates from the Northern States, and after much controversy the subject was settled by a compromise between the two sides, in which it was agreed that Missouri might come into the Union as a slave State, but that thereafter no slave State should be formed out of any territory lying north of 36 degrees, 30 minutes of north latitude, which is the southern boundary line of Missouri, or northern boundary line of Arkansas; and any States formed south of that line might have slavery or not, as they saw fit.

**3. Opposition to Slavery.** This settlement of affairs had the effect of tranquilizing the public mind, and matters went along peaceably and smoothly for a time. Some opposition was displayed to the creation of slave States, even south of the compromise line, as took place in the case of the admission of Arkansas in 1836, of Texas in 1846, and in the formation of territories out of the country obtained from Mexico by the war of 1846-1848; but matters remained comparatively quiet until 1850, when another serious outbreak was threatened by it being proposed to abolish slavery in the District of Columbia, and to admit California into the Union as a free State. Matters were again quieted by a second compromise, proposed by the great statesman, Henry Clay, which provided for the admission of California as a free State, and the abolition of slavery in the District of Columbia, but added a provision, that slaves escaping into the free States should not thereby become free, but should be restored to their masters in the slave States.

---

**3.**—When did further trouble concerning the matter arise? By what was it settled? What were the features of this compromise?

**4. Events Leading to the War.** This last named feature of the law, which was known as the "Fugitive Slave Law," gave great dissatisfaction in the free States, and resulted in the enactment in many of those States of what were called "Personal Liberty Bills," which had the effect of destroying the operation of the Fugitive Slave Law. These being followed by the repeal of the Missouri Compromise Law and the establishment of TERRITORIAL GOVERNMENTS for Kansas and Nebraska, with or without slavery, as the people of those Territories saw fit, created much public excitement. In Kansas a long series of conflicts took place, known as the Border War, arising from the fact that one portion of the inhabitants desired slavery to exist in the Territory, and brought their slaves thither, while others who were opposed to slavery endeavored to keep them out. This state of public excitement was intensified by a decision of the Supreme Court of the United States, called the Dred Scott decision, which was that slaves being taken to the free States did not thereby become free, and by an insurrection organized about this time by John Brown, of Kansas, at HARPER'S FERRY in Virginia, designed for the liberation of slaves, but which was unsuccessful, and was suppressed by the aid of the National Government, after having caused considerable bloodshed and loss of life.

**5. The Election of Abraham Lincoln.** It was in this condition of public affairs that the Presidential election of 1860 took place. There were four candidates, as we have seen. John C. Breckinridge, of Kentucky, and Joseph Lane, of Oregon, representing one wing of the Democratic party; Stephen A. Douglas, of Illinois, and Herschel V. Johnson, of Georgia, representing another; John Bell, of Tennessee, and Edward Everett, of Massachusetts, representing the Union and Constitution party, composed of portions of the old Whig and Know Nothing parties, and

---

4.—State what events followed the establishment of this compromise

5.—What exciting event took place in 1860? What transpired following this election?

also drawing some supporters from the Democratic party, and Abraham Lincoln, of Illinois, and Hannibal Hamlin, of Maine, representing the Republican party, or party opposed to slavery. After a campaign of tremendous excitement, in which the whole country was fairly ablaze from one end of it to the other, Lincoln and Hamlin were elected. The vote of Arkansas in this election was given for Breckinridge and Lane. Immediately following this election the State of South Carolina, deeming that the course of the new administration would be hostile to her interests, as the



power of the Government had now gone into the hands of the party opposed to slavery, passed an ordinance of secession and withdrew from the Union. In this she was quickly followed by the States of Mississippi, Florida, Alabama, Georgia, Louisiana and Texas. These States organized at Montgomery, Alabama, what was called a Southern Confederacy, and chose for its President Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, with Alexander H. Stephens, of Georgia, Vice-President.

**6. The State Convention of Arkansas.** During this time the sentiment of the people of Arkansas was in favor of the Union. In the critical condition of the times the Legislature called a convention of the people, to take into consideration the condition of public affairs, and to determine what was the proper course for the State of Arkansas to pursue. The convention sat in March, 1861, and although several propositions were made in favor of withdrawing from the Union, they were all voted down, and the convention adjourned, without having done anything favorable to secession, except to provide that the question of whether they would withdraw from the Union or not, should be left to a vote of the people.

**7. The War Begins. The Ordinance of Secession.** But before the time arrived at which the vote of the people was to be had, the war actually began. The Government of the United States having despatched a fleet from New York to re-enforce and hold Fort Sumter in Charleston Harbor, over which the State of South Carolina claimed ownership and jurisdiction, by reason of it being within her limits, the Confederate authorities declared this to be an act of war, and troops of the Confederacy, under General Beauregard, opened fire on the fort, April 12th, 1861, and bombarded it for thirty-two hours; at the end of which time Major Anderson, its defender, surrendered it. Upon this taking place, President Lincoln issued a proclamation, calling for 75,000 men to put down the rebellion, and called on the State of Arkansas to furnish a portion of them. These incidents, the beginning of the war, and the demand on her for troops to aid therein, completely altered the attitude of public

---

6.—What was the sentiment of Arkansas in this crisis at first? What action did the State convention take?

7.—Out of what incident did the war actually begin? What then took place? What effect had this action on the public sentiment of Arkansas?



sentiment in the State. The people now became practically unanimous in favor of secession. Governor Rector returned an answer refusing to furnish any troops, and the convention which re-assembled, May 5th, on the next day passed, by a vote of sixty-nine in the affirmative to one in the negative, an ordinance of secession, withdrawing the State from the Union, and for good or ill, joining her fortunes with the other States of the South. The one vote against the secession of the State was cast by Isaac Murphy, delegate from Madison County. The convention also adopted a constitution for the State known as the Constitution of 1861. The State was admitted a member of the Southern Confederacy under this constitution, May 20th, 1861.

**8. Organization of Troops.** Everything was now in a state of the utmost excitement. Companies, battalions, regiments, batteries of artillery and other commands were formed with the utmost rapidity all over the State, and arming themselves as best they could, hurried to the front to take part in active operations. A Military Board was formed, composed of the Governor, Henry M. Rector, Benjamin C. Totten of Prairie County, and Christopher C. Danley of Little Rock, to arm and equip troops. Samuel W. Williams of Little Rock succeeded Captain Danley as a member of this Board, and upon Colonel Williams going into the service, L. D. Hill of Perry County succeeded him. This Military Board called for 10,000 volunteers in addition to the troops that had at the first entered the field, and these regiments with many others were speedily raised and took part in the struggle. In short, it may be said, that out of a voting population of 61,198 in 1860, fully five-sixths of the number, or 50,000 entered the

---

What demand was made on her? What action did the convention now take? By what vote?

**8.**—What preparation for war was made by the State of Arkansas?

Confederate service. In the course of time, from the year 1862, when the Federal or United States forces occupied the northern and eastern portions of the State, a number of recruits entered the service on that side. The full number who did so was a little above 13,000, of whom a considerable portion were colored troops.

**9. Field of Operation of Arkansas Troops.** Any detailed account of the men from Arkansas taking part in this war must necessarily be left for larger histories. In a work of this character it can only be said that there was no portion of the wide theatre of war but what Arkansas soldiers were there, and took part in its operations. Of those who were in the army of the Southern Confederacy, some were in Virginia in the armies of Beauregard, Johnston, Lee, Jackson and Longstreet, from the beginning of the war until the end. Many were in Kentucky under Bragg and Kirby Smith; in Tennessee and Georgia under Bragg, Johnston and Hood; in Mississippi under Price and Van Dorn; in Missouri under Price; in Arkansas under Hindman and Holmes, and in Louisiana under General Dick Taylor. Besides the battles which were fought on her own soil, soldiers from Arkansas were engaged on the Confederate side in all the great battles in Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania, from Manasses to the surrender of Lee at Appomattox; in those of Oak Hill, Shiloh, Corinth, Murfreesboro, Chickamauga, Missionary Ridge, and all the engagements of Johnston's army from the opening of the campaign of 1864 until his surrender in North Carolina, after the surrender of Lee. They were at Fort Donelson; at the siege of Vicksburg and Port Hudson, in each of which places many were made prisoners; and at other important points where the varying events of

---

What troops were raised for the Confederate service? What troops went into the Federal service?

9.—What was the field of operations of Arkansas troops? State what extent of losses occurred to regiments of her troops in the Confederate service.

the conflict called them. The loss sustained by them in the progress of the great struggle was terrific. Regiments which entered the war with the full number of 1000 men and more, had less than 100 men left at the close of the struggle, and some even less than forty men. Other regiments were so far depleted as to entirely lose their identity and become merged into others.

**10. General Patrick R. Cleburne.** Among the personages from Arkansas who became distinguished as commanding officers on the Confederate side there may be particularly mentioned General Patrick R. Cleburne. He was one of the most intrepid and valorous commanders whom the Southern army had. At the commencement of these difficulties he was a private in the ranks of the Yell Rifles of Helena, but eventually rose to the rank of a Major-General, and commanded his troops always with most distinguished success. He was killed at the battle of Franklin, November 30th, 1864, and is buried at Helena, his old home.



GEN. P. R. CLEBURNE.

## CHAPTER XIX.

*1862 to 1865—The Continuation of the War. Harris Flanagin, Confederate Governor; Isaac Murphy, Federal Governor.*

**1. Harris Flanagin, Governor.** Along with incidents of a military nature certain matters of a civil and a political kind are now to be noted. One is a change in the governorship. In November, 1862, Governor Rector resigned his office, and was succeeded by Thomas Fletcher of Arkansas County, who was President of the Confederate Senate. A special election for Governor

---

**10.—**Give an account of General Cleburne.

**CHAPTER XIX. 1.—**Who succeeded Governor Rector as Governor, and when? Give an account of him.

was held, at which Harris Flanagin of Arkadelphia, who was commanding a Confederate regiment in the field, was elected.



HARRIS FLANAGIN, SEVENTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE.

Harris Flanagin, the seventh Governor of the State, was born at Roadstown, Cumberland County, New Jersey, November 3d, 1817. He came to Arkansas in 1837, and settled at Greenville, Clark County, engaging in the practice of law. He resided at Greenville until 1842, when upon the county seat of the county being established at Arkadelphia, he moved to that place and resided there until his death; which occurred October 23d, 1874, at the age of fifty-seven years.

**2. Cross County.** Another matter to be noted is the formation, by the Legislature, of the counties of Cross and Woodruff. Cross County, the fifty-eighth county created, was formed November 15th, 1862, out of territory taken from St. Francis County, and was named in honor of Judge Edward Cross, one of the pioneers of the State. The county seat was located at Wittsburg, where it now is. Cross County is an interior county, eastward, separated from the Mississippi River by Crittenden County.

**3. Woodruff County,** the fifty-ninth county created, was formed November 26th, 1862, out of territory taken from White County, and was named in honor of the veteran pioneer, William E. Woodruff, Sr. The county seat was located at Augusta,

---

2.—What is said of Cross County?

3.—Of Woodruff County?

where it now is. Woodruff County is an eastward interior county, and Augusta, which is a place of considerable importance, lying on White River, is its chief town.

**4. Emancipation of the Slaves.** Another highly important act of a political nature, taking place at this time, was the emancipation of slaves. In September, 1862, President Lincoln issued his proclamation, declaring that if the States of the South did not return to their allegiance by January 1st, 1863, all slaves in their limits should be thereafter free. The States of the South not having returned to their allegiance by the specified date, President Lincoln issued his second proclamation, declaring the slaves to be free from that date. This was afterwards also declared by an amendment to the National Constitution. Thus, by one far-reaching act, there was swept away a subject which had been a source of trouble since the very foundation of the Government itself. The number of slaves in Arkansas liberated by this proclamation was 111,259, as given in the census of 1860.

**5. Battle of Pea Ridge.** In the progress of the war the State of Arkansas was not made as much of a battleground as other portions of the Southern Confederacy, yet a number of bloody and desperate conflicts took place on her soil. One was at Pea Ridge, in Benton County, called the battle of Elkhorn; between the Federals, under General Samuel R. Curtis, and the Confederates, under General Earl Van Dorn. The Confederates, though greatly outnumbered, held their ground well, but their movements were disconcerted by the loss of two of their most efficient Generals, James McIntosh and Ben McCullough, both of whom were killed in the fight. After this battle General Van Dorn retreated southward, and General Curtis moved southeast, first to Batesville and then to

---

**4.**—Give in your own language an account of the emancipation of the slaves in the United States. What number were liberated in Arkansas?

**5.**—What is said of the battle of Pea Ridge? When, where and between what commanders fought? Its incidents? Subsequent movements?

Helena, where he remained. The army under Van Dorn was shortly afterwards moved east of the Mississippi River, leaving no Confederate troops in Arkansas at all for a while.



GEN. T. C. HINDMAN

**6. The Trans-Mississippi Department.** At this time the Confederate authorities created a new department, composed of the States of Arkansas, Louisiana and Texas, called the TRANS-MISSISSIPPI DEPARTMENT. General Thomas C. Hindman was placed in command in Arkansas, and with the assistance of General John Selden Roane, organized an army therein, and served to hold General Curtis in check in two slight skirmishes; near St. Charles, June 17th, and at Cache River, July 7th, 1862.

**7. Battle of Prairie Grove.** Another severe engagement in Arkansas was the battle of Prairie Grove, fought in Washington County, December 7th, 1862, by the Federals under Generals Blunt and Herron, and the Confederates under General Hindman. In this battle the heaviest of the engagement on the Confederate side was borne by the troops under General James F. Fagan. At the termination of the engagement the Confederates remained in possession of the field from which the Federal forces had retired, but shortly afterwards retreated southward.

**8. Hardships in Domestic Life.** By the end of the year 1862 the hardships of domestic life in Arkansas had become very great, from the scarcity of so many articles of ordinary necessity. Owing to the fact that all the ports of the entire South were closed by a rigid blockade, by which all communication with the outside

---

6.—What is said of the formation of the Trans-Mississippi Department?

7.—What is said of the battle of Prairie Grove?

8.—Give an account of the hardships in domestic life in Arkansas during the progress of the war.

world was prevented, articles of daily consumption which are usually imported, such as tea, coffee, pepper, drugs, medicines and the like, became exhausted, and people were obliged either to do without or to make use of such substitutes as could be provided. In addition to the scarcity of articles, the money of the Confederacy, which was the purchasing medium in use, had become greatly depreciated; so that it took many dollars of such money to equal the value of a dollar of gold or silver. In this way a pound of pepper would bring \$300, a pair of boots \$80, a pair of shoes \$35, and other articles in corresponding proportion.

**9. Capture of Arkansas Post.** The year 1863 was one of more extended military operations in Arkansas. In the early part of January General McClelland and Admiral Porter, with a large Federal force, moved against Arkansas Post, which was garrisoned by a force of about 3000 Confederates under General Thomas J. Churchill. After a stubborn resistance of three days made by the garrison the place was taken, and the defenders were made prisoners, January 11th, 1863.

**10. Battle of Helena.** The most desperate and sanguinary battle of the year in Arkansas was the Battle of Helena, July 4th, 1863, between the forces of General Curtis, defending the place, which was strongly fortified, and the Confederates, under General Theophilus H. Holmes. In this battle the Confederates gallantly attacked the Federal breastworks and captured parts of them, but were afterwards repulsed with great loss. The result of the engagement was the defeat of the Confederate forces, and their retreat across the country. At the same date as

---

**9.—**Give an account of the capture of Arkansas Post.

**10.—**Of the battle of Helena. What other incidents in the general progress of the war took place at and about this date?

this battle Vicksburg surrendered to General Grant, and Lee's army had been defeated at Gettysburg the day before; so that this particular juncture was one of great disaster to the Confederate arms.

**11. Capture of Little Rock.** After these operations the Federal General Steele, who was in command of the United States forces in Arkansas, made a move to penetrate further into the interior of the State, with a force of about 20,000 men. He accordingly moved his expedition from Helena, and after encountering the Confederate forces in a number of minor engagements, pushed on until he appeared before Little Rock, which place he captured, after a slight engagement,



GEN. FREDERICK STEELE,  
FEDERAL COMMANDER  
IN ARKANSAS

September 10th, 1863. The Confederate forces under General Sterling Price retreated southward and established themselves on the Ouachita River and vicinity. Here they passed the winter of 1863, and there were only a few military movements; the chief of which was an unsuccessful attack, made October 25th, 1863, by General John S. Marmaduke, on the town of Pine Bluff, which was defended by General Powell Clayton.



GEN. STERLING PRICE,  
CONFEDERATE COMMANDER  
IN ARKANSAS

**12. Isaac Murphy, Governor.** Following the taking possession of the Capital, proceedings were set on foot in 1864 to institute a State Government. A Constitution was established and State officers were chosen. Isaac Murphy, from Madison County,

---

**11.—**Give an account of the capture of Little Rock and subsequent movements.



the delegate in the Convention of 1861 who alone had voted against secession, was made Governor. The Federal or United States Court was reopened at Little Rock, Henry C. Caldwell being appointed District Judge. Governor Murphy, the eighth Governor of the State, was born near Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, October 16th, 1802. He came to Arkansas in November, 1834, and settled in Fayetteville, where he taught school. He moved to Huntsville in September, 1854, and continued to teach, residing there the remainder of his life. He served as Governor until July, 1868. He died at Huntsville, his home, September 8th, 1882, in the eightieth year of his age.



ISAAC MURPHY, EIGHTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE.

**13. Battle of Jenkins' Ferry.** After having passed the winter of 1863 at Little Rock, General Steele set out in the Spring of 1864 to follow up the Confederate forces, but his advance encountered a severe check at Marks Mills, April 25th, and at Jenkins' Ferry, April 30th, 1864, in which his force was roughly handled, and his entire army narrowly escaped capture by a retreat to Little Rock. Being thus relieved of any pressure a portion of

---

**12.**—After the taking possession of the Capital who was made Governor? Give an account of him.

**13.**—Give an account of military movements in 1864.

the Arkansas Confederate army was transferred to the command of General Dick Taylor, in Louisiana, and took part in the battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill.

**14. Price's Raid into Missouri. End of the War.** After this matters remained inactive in Arkansas until about September 1st, 1864, when General Price started from his camp in southwest Arkansas on a raid into Missouri. He marched his army as far north as Kansas, fighting many battles, the principal of which was at Pilot Knob, in Missouri, where his forces were repulsed. The general result of the expedition was fruitless, and after having gone as far north as Marais des Cygnes (*mair-a-day-scen'*), in Kansas, where they met with a considerable reverse, the army turned back and returned to Arkansas. This was the end of active operations, for the great war, having been fought out to the bitter end, was drawing to a close. General Lee surrendered his force, about 9000 effective men, or about 27,000 men in all, at Appomattox in Virginia, April 9th, 1865. This caused the collapse of the Confederacy, and following this act General Johnston surrendered his forces in North Carolina, April 26th; and about the same date General E. Kirby Smith surrendered the armies of the Trans-Mississippi Department.

Thus the most stupendous war of modern times was over. The total number of men taking part in it on the Southern side was about 600,000, and on the Federal side about 2,100,000. The total number of men surrendered by the entire Confederate armies at the conclusion of the struggle was about 100 000.

---

**14.—**Of Price's raid into Missouri. Describe the incidents of the conclusion of the war and of the surrender of the Confederate forces.

As this PERIOD embraces only two chapters, no separate questions for review are deemed necessary. The questions contained in each chapter may be used for the purpose if desired.

## VI.—THE PERIOD SINCE THE WAR.

FROM THE YEAR 1865 ONWARD.

### CHAPTER XX.

*1865 to 1871—In the Administration of Governor Isaac Murphy, and that of Governor Powell Clayton.*

**1. Resumption of Civil Concerns.** Upon the restoration of peace the people of Arkansas, who were mostly impoverished by the result of the war, turned their efforts to the rebuilding of their private fortunes. Governor Murphy's administration was peaceful, and under it the State began to assume some degree of prosperity. The course of national affairs, however, was looked to with considerable solicitude.

**2. The Reconstruction Measures.** President Andrew Johnson, who was now at the head of the Government since the death of President Lincoln, was at first disposed to deal harshly with the Southern States for their participation in the rebellion, but after a while his course changed to one of leniency, and he acted with a desire to restore those States to their former status in the Union by the simplest and easiest methods. In this, however, he was opposed by Congress, which adopted what is known as a Reconstruction Policy, passing "an Act for the more efficient government of the rebel States." This and other laws placed the Southern States under military rule, and directed that those States should adopt new constitutions, and fully recognize the civil and political rights of the newly-liberated negro race. The States of Arkansas

---

CHAPTER XX. 1.—What was the condition of public affairs at the restoration of peace?

2.—What were the Reconstruction Measures of Congress?

and Mississippi were organized into the fourth military district, and were placed under command of General E. O. C. Ord, and the State of Arkansas was made a sub-district under command of General Gillem.

**3. The State Constitution of 1868.** The Reconstruction law of Congress prohibited a large number of persons in Arkansas from voting, on account of having taken part in the war on the Confederate side. Under this law the military authorities held an election for delegates to a Constitutional Convention to form a new Constitution, and afterwards held an election on the adoption of the Constitution proposed by the Convention. This Constitution, as adopted, contained similar disfranchisement in it to that which the law of Congress contained.

**4. Powell Clayton, Governor.** At the time of voting on the Constitution, State officers were elected, all of whom were Republicans in politics. GENERAL POWELL CLAYTON was elected GOVERNOR, the ninth Governor of the State. He was born in Delaware County, Pennsylvania, August 7th, 1833, and lived in that country until 1855, when he moved to Kansas and settled at Leavenworth as a civil engineer. On the breaking out of the war he entered the First Kansas Cavalry as captain, and was afterwards Lieutenant-Colonel, and then Colonel of the Fifth Kansas Cavalry. He was under General Curtis at Helena, and under General Steele at the capture of Little Rock. He was in command at Pine Bluff, which place he defended from the attack of the Confederate General, Marmaduke. He was afterwards promoted to Brigadier-General for his services. After the conclusion of the war he remained a citizen of Arkansas. Being now Gov-

---

3.—What was the effect of these laws? What elections were held in Arkansas in pursuance of them?

4.—Who was elected Governor at the time? Give an account of him.

ernor he served until 1871, when he was elected United States Senator by the Legislature, and served until 1877, after which he located at Eureka Springs, Carroll County. After the date of his election as Governor—to-wit: in July, 1868, a bill was passed in Congress restoring the State of Arkansas to the Union and giving her representation in Congress. Benjamin F. Rice and Alexander McDonald were elected United States Senators.\*



POWELL CLAYTON, NINTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE

**5. Little River County.** During this time certain counties had been formed which are to be mentioned. Little River County, the sixtieth county created, was formed by the Legislature during the administration of Governor Murphy, March 5th, 1867, out of territory taken from the counties of Hempstead and Sevier, and took its name from the Little River, which forms its northern boundary. The temporary seat of justice was established at the house of William Freeman. In 1880 the county seat was established at the town of Richmond, where it now is. Little River is a southwest border county, lying along the Choctaw line, and Richmond, which was founded in 1853, is its chief town.

\*There had been no Senatorial representation since 1861, when Robert W. Johnson and William K. Sebastian filled the positions. Charles B. Mitchell was elected in 1880 as the successor of Robert W. Johnson, but only attended one executive session after March 4th, and did not afterwards occupy the seat.

6. **Sharp County**, the sixty-first county created, was formed by the Legislature, July 18th, 1868, out of territory taken from Lawrence County, and was named after Ephraim Sharp, representative in the lower house of the General Assembly. In the same year commissioners appointed to select the county seat located it at the town of Evening Shade, where it now is. Sharp is a northern border county, the north point of it touching the Missouri line. Evening Shade is its principal town.

7. **Public Measures.** During the administration of Governor Clayton many important public matters were transacted by the Legislature, among which were the funding of the public debt which has been mentioned; the issue of a large amount of bonds in aid of railroads; establishing the Deaf Mute Institute; re-creating the system of free common schools, which system was imperfect under previous laws; and assenting to two amendments to the National Constitution, known respectively as the Fourteenth and Fifteenth Amendments, guaranteeing to the colored race equal civil and political rights with the white race. This particular period was, however, rendered distressful by kuklux and militia troubles, and by the general unsettled condition of public affairs. In the Autumn of 1868 a Presidential election occurred. The candidates were General Ulysses S. Grant for President and Schuyler Colfax for Vice-President, nominated by the Republicans, and Horatio Seymour of New York for President and General Frank P. Blair of Missouri for Vice-President, nominated by the Democrats. In the election, which took place in November, Grant and Colfax were elected by a large vote. The electoral vote of Arkansas was one of the States given for them.

---

6.—Of Sharp County?

7.—What important public acts took place at this time? What Presidential election? Who were candidates, and who were elected? For whom was the electoral vote of Arkansas given?

**8. Grant County.** At the next session of the Legislature, which held from November, 1868, to April, 1869, the counties of Grant and Boone were formed. Grant County, the sixty-second county created, was formed February 4th, 1869, out of territory taken from the counties of Saline, Hot Spring and Jefferson, and was named after General Grant, the new President. In 1869 the county seat was located at Sheridan, where it now is. Grant County is an interior county, southwest from centre, and Sheridan, which was founded in 1869, is its principal town.

**9. Boone County,** the sixty-third county created, was formed April 9th, 1869, out of territory taken from the counties of Carroll and Marion, and is believed to have been named for Daniel Boone, the hunter of Kentucky. The temporary seat of justice was located at the house of H. W. Fick. The county seat was afterwards established at Harrison, where it now is. Boone County is a north-western border county, bounded north by the Missouri line. Harrison, which was laid out as a town about the year 1860, and is a thriving place of considerable importance, is its chief town.

**10. The Census of 1870.** In the Government CENSUS of the year 1870 the population of Arkansas was given at 484,471, being a gain of 49,021 over the census of 1860.

**11. Nevada County,** the sixty-fourth county created, was formed March 20th, 1871, out of territory taken from the counties of Hempstead, Ouachita and Columbia. The temporary seat of justice was established at Mount Meriah. The permanent county seat was established at Rosston, where it remained until 1879, when it was moved to Prescott, where it now is. Nevada is a southwestern county, lying in the Ouachita River Valley, and Prescott, which was laid out as a town in 1871, is its chief town.

8.—What is said of Grant County?

9.—Of Boone County?

10.—What was the population of Arkansas in 1870? How much of a gain was this over the previous census?

11.—What is said of Nevada County?

**12. Logan County**, the sixty-fifth county created, was formed by the Legislature, March 22d, 1871, out of territory taken from the counties of Yell, Johnson, Franklin and Scott. It was first named Sarber County, but in 1875 the name was changed to Logan County, in honor of James Logan, one of the pioneers in that part of the State. The temporary seat of justice was established at Reveille, and afterwards the county seat was established at Paris, where it now is. Logan is a north-western county, south of the Arkansas River, and Paris is its chief town.

**13. Lincoln County**, the sixty-sixth county created, was formed March 28th, 1871, out of territory taken from the counties of Drew, Desha, Arkansas, Bradley and Jefferson, and was named in honor of President Abraham Lincoln. The temporary seat of justice was established at Cane Creek Church, and the county seat was afterwards located at Star City. On the formation of a separate district in the county Varner was also made a county seat. Lincoln County is an interior county, southeast, having the Arkansas River for its northeast boundary.

**14. The St. Louis, Iron Mountain and Southern Railroad.** In the years 1871 and 1872 a great public improvement took place in the building of the St. Louis, Iron Mountain and Southern Railroad, from the Missouri line to the city of Little Rock. This road, which is one of the most important railroads in the State, was chartered in 1854, under the name of the Cairo and Fulton Railroad. In the years 1873 and 1874 it was completed southwestward to the Texas border and beyond, thus making a continuous thoroughfare across the State, from northeast to southwest, and forming one of its chief avenues of commerce and travel.

---

12.—What of Logan County?

13.—What of Lincoln County?

14.—What great public improvement was made in the years 1871 to 1874?



## CHAPTER XXI.

*1871 to 1874—The Administration of Acting Governor Ozro A. Hadley and that of Governor Elisha Baxter.*

**I. O. A. Hadley, Acting Governor.** Upon the Legislature of 1871 was devolved the duty of electing a successor to Alexander McDonald in the United States Senate, his term expiring. Governor Powell Clayton was elected to the position, and was succeeded as Governor by Ozro A. Hadley, who was President of the State Senate. O. A. Hadley was born at Cherry Creek, Chatauqua County, New York, June 26th, 1826, and lived there until 1855, when he emigrated to Minnesota. In 1865 he came South and settled in Little Rock, engaging in mercantile pursuits. He became State Senator for the Pulaski District under the Constitution of 1868, and was elected President of that body, and as such succeeded Governor Clayton. He served as Acting Governor until January, 1873, when he was succeeded by Elisha Baxter. After his term of office he was appointed Register of the United States Land Office, and then Postmaster at Little Rock; after which he moved from the State.



O. A. HADLEY, ACTING GOVERNOR.

---

CHAPTER XXI. 1.—To what position was Governor Clayton elected by the Legislature of 1871? Who succeeded him as Acting Governor? Give an account of him.

2. **U. S. Grant, President.** In the year 1872 two remarkable political contests occurred in State and national affairs, in which the people of Arkansas were engaged. President Grant was nominated for re-election by the Republican party, with Henry Wilson of Massachusetts for Vice-President. The Democratic party did not make any nomination, but mainly supported Horace Greeley, the great New York editor, for President, and B. Gratz Brown of Missouri for Vice-President, nominated by the Reform or Conservative Republicans. In the election in November Grant and Wilson were elected. Mr. Greeley died between the day of holding the election and the time of casting the electoral vote; so several of the votes which he would have received were given to Grant, and others were cast for a number of other persons who had not been mentioned in connection with the position, being simply complimentary votes.

3. **Election for Governor between Brooks and Baxter.** In the State election for Governor, occurring in the same year, a similar course of events took place. The regular Republican party nominated Elisha Baxter of Batesville for Governor, and a division of the same party, known as the Reform Republicans, nominated Joseph Brooks. The Democrats had no separate candidate of their own. The contest resulted in favor of Baxter. Mr. Brooks contested the election before the Legislature, which was the tribunal authorized by law to decide who was elected, but they declared in favor of Baxter, and he was inaugurated before them in January, 1873, and began the exercise of the duties of the office.

4. **Elisha Baxter, Governor.** Elisha Baxter, the tenth Governor of Arkansas, was born in Rutherford County, North Carolina, September 1st, 1827. He came to Arkansas in 1852 and engaged

---

2.—Give an account of the Presidential election of 1872.

3.—Give an account of the State election for Governor in that year.

4.—Give an account of Governor Baxter.

in merchandising at Batesville. After a while he engaged to learn the printing business in the office of the *Independent Balance* a newspaper published in Batesville. He also studied law, and began the practice of that profession. He was twice a member of the Legislature. Being a Union man, he did not take part in the war, but went to Missouri for safety. Here he was made a prisoner, and was brought to Little Rock and imprisoned, but escaped, and when General Steele's army had captured the city he made his way to them. On the establishment of the Murphy Government of 1864 he was made a judge of the Supreme Court; and was elected United States Senator, but was refused admission as Senator, the State not having at that time been restored to the Union. Becoming Governor, he served as such to 1874, after which he returned to Batesville and engaged in the practice of law.



ELISHA BAXTER, TENTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE.

5. **Baxter's Administration.** Governor Baxter's administration soon gave evidence of being a conservative one, and for the general good of the people. In it a number of matters of public concern took place. One was to restore the right of voting to a large number of those persons who had been disfranchised under

---

5.—What is said of the course of his administration? What counties were created therein?

previous laws. In the session of the Legislature, at which he was inaugurated, Stephen W. Dorsey was elected United States Senator to succeed Benjamin F. Rice, whose term had expired; and nine new counties were formed—to-wit: the counties of Clayton (now called Clay), Baxter, Garland, Faulkner, Lonoke, Howard, Dorsey (now called Cleveland), Lee and Stone.

6. **Clay County**, the sixty-seventh county created, was formed March 24th, 1873, out of territory taken from the counties of Randolph and Greene. It was given the name of Clayton County after State Senator John M. Clayton, but in the year 1875 the Legislature changed the name to Clay County. The county seat was located at Boydsville, but in 1881 two districts were created in the county, one for Boydsville and the other for Corning, making both places county seats. Clay County is the extreme northeast point of the State of Arkansas, and is bounded north and east by the State of Missouri.

7. **Baxter County**, the sixty-eighth county created, was formed March 24th, 1873, out of territory taken from the counties of Marion, Fulton, Izard and Searcy, and was named for the Governor, Elisha Baxter. Both the temporary seat of justice and the permanent county seat were located at Mountain Home. Baxter County is a northern border county, lying along the Missouri line, and Mountain Home is its principal town.

8. **Garland County**, the sixty-ninth county created, was formed April 5th, 1873, out of territory taken from the counties of Saline, Hot Spring and Montgomery, and was named in honor of Augustus H. Garland. The county seat was located at the city of Hot Springs, which was formerly in Hot Spring County, but which fell within the limits of the new county. Garland is an interior county, southwest of centre, and Hot Springs is its chief

---

6.—What is said of Clay County?

7.—Of Baxter County?

8.—Of Garland County? Of the hot springs?

place. The hot springs from which the city takes its name have obtained a world-wide fame for the cure of diseases, and are annually visited by thousands in search of health. Some scattered settlements were made in the valley, where these springs are situated, commencing in the year 1807 and running on to the year 1829, when the springs first began to attract attention and receive visitors. A long contest for the possession of the land at the springs was maintained between three claimants, representing claims known respectively as the Belding or Gaines claim, the Perciful or Hale claim, and the claim of Governor Henry M. Rector. The matter was finally ended after many years of litigation by the United States Government itself holding the title as against all the claimants. The land was then sold in lots by the Government, and a splendid city has been built there, it being one of the most thrifty and enterprising cities in the State.

**9. Faulkner County**, the seventieth county created, was formed April 12th, 1873, out of territory taken from the counties of Conway and Pulaski. Both the temporary seat of justice and the permanent county seat were located at Conway. Faulkner is an interior county, north of centre, and Conway is its chief town.

**10. Lonoke County**, the seventy-first county created, was formed April 16th, 1873, out of territory taken from the counties of Prairie and Pulaski, and took its name from the town of Lonoke, which was made the county seat. The town was so called from a *lone oak* tree which stood near the spot at which the place was located. Lonoke county is an eastern, central county, traversed by the Memphis and Little Rock Railroad, and the town of Lonoke, which is a growing, thriving city of considerable importance, is its principal place.

9.—Of Faulkner County?

10.—Of Lonoke County?

**11. Cleveland County**, the seventy-second county created, was formed April 17th, 1873, out of territory taken from the counties of Jefferson, Dallas, Bradley and Lincoln. It was at first named Dorsey County, but in the year 1885 the name was changed by the Legislature to Cleveland County, after President Grover Cleveland. The county seat was located at Toledo, but in the Summer of 1889 an election for the location of the county seat was held, which resulted in favor of the town of Rison. Cleveland is an interior county, south.

**12. Howard County**, the seventy-third county created, was formed April 17th, 1873, out of territory taken from the counties of Polk, Pike, Hempstead and Sevier, and was named after James Howard, State Senator of the district in that year. The county seat was established at Centre Point, where it is now. Howard is a southwest county, separated from the Indian Territory by the county of Sevier and part of Polk. Centre Point, which was founded as a town about the year 1851, is its chief town.

**13. Lee County**, the seventy-fourth county created, was formed April 17th, 1873, out of territory taken from the counties of Crittenden, Phillips, Monroe and St. Francis, and was named in honor of General Robert E. Lee. The temporary seat of justice was established at Marianna, which was also made the permanent county seat. Lee County is an eastern border county, bounded east by the Mississippi River and south by Phillips County. Marianna, which was incorporated as a town in 1871, is its principal town, and is a place of importance.

**14. Stone County**, the seventy-fifth county created, was formed April 21st, 1873, out of territory taken from the counties of Izard, Independence, Van Buren and Searcy. The temporary seat of

---

11.—Of Cleveland County?

12.—Of Howard County?

13.—Of Lee County?

14.—Of Stone County?

justice was located at Mountain View, which was also continued as the permanent county seat. Stone County is an interior county, north, bounded north by Baxter and Izard Counties, and east by Independence. Mountain View is its principal town.

**15. The Brooks and Baxter War. The Constitution of 1874.** All during the administration of Governor Baxter, Joseph Brooks continued his contest for the office of Governor, claiming that he had been elected thereto. His claim was refused both by the Legislature and the courts. Finally, however, a judgment was rendered in his favor in the Circuit Court of Pulaski County, on the 15th of April, 1874, declaring him entitled to the office of Governor. Immediately afterwards he went to the Statehouse, where he ejected Baxter and took possession of the Governor's office. Governor Baxter thereupon declared martial law and called out the militia to his support. Mr. Brooks and his followers were in armed occupation of the Statehouse, and those which were gathered to the support of Baxter were close at hand. Several collisions occurred with considerable bloodshed and loss of life, known as the Brooks and Baxter war. Both sides appealed to the President for aid of the military power. Finally Governor Baxter called the Legislature to convene in special session, and they recognized him as the legitimate Governor. Upon this President Grant also recognized Baxter as the legal Governor, and called upon Mr. Brooks' supporters to disperse. This was done, they having held possession of the Statehouse for thirty days, and upon their vacating it Governor Baxter again took possession. The Legislature now proceeded to call a convention of the people to frame a new Constitution. Under it a convention was held, and the present Constitution of the State was promulgated, and

---

**15.—**Give an account of the Brooks and Baxter war. Its origin and incidents. Of the State convention. Of the Constitution of 1874. Who was elected Governor under that Constitution?

was adopted by the people, October 30th, 1874. At the time of its adoption an election for State and County officers was held, in which Augustus H. Garland was elected Governor, together with a full complement of State officers, all of whom were of the Democratic party.

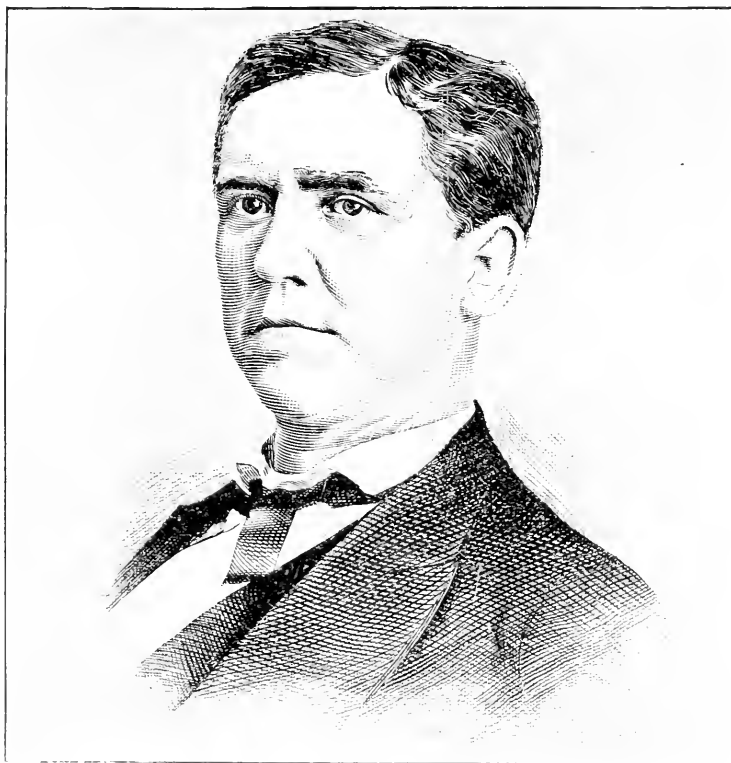
## CHAPTER XXII.

*1874 to 1883—The Administration of Governor A. H. Garland; that of Governor William R. Miller, two terms; and that of Governor Thomas J. Churchill.*

1. **Augustus H. Garland**, who was elected Governor under the Constitution of 1874, and who was the eleventh Governor of the State, was born in Tipton County, Tennessee, June 11th, 1832. In 1833 his parents came to Arkansas and settled in Hempstead County. On reaching manhood he studied law and was admitted to the bar at Washington in 1853. He practiced law there until 1856, when he moved to Little Rock, where he afterwards resided. During the war he was a member of the Confederate Congress, being first a Representative in the lower House and next a Senator. After the war he resumed the practice of law at Little Rock, and became a distinguished lawyer.

Being elected Governor, October 30th, 1874, he served for two years, which was the length of the term of office under the new Constitution, it having been four years under the previous laws. After being Governor he was elected United States Senator in January, 1877, to succeed Senator Powell Clayton, and in 1882 was again elected for a term of six years, to March, 1889, but upon the election of President Cleveland in 1884 he was appointed Attorney-General of the United States in the President's Cabinet, and resigning the Senatorship he became Attorney-General. He was the first person from Arkansas to hold a Cabinet position.





AUGUSTUS H. GARLAND, ELEVENTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE---ATTORNEY-GENERAL OF THE UNITED STATES, 1885-89

On his resigning the Senatorship Governor James H. Berry was elected his successor, to serve the unexpired portion of the term, from 1885 to 1889.

2. **Finances of the State.** In commencing his administration Governor Garland found the treasury entirely empty, and a large

2.—What is said of the financial affairs of the State in his administration?

public debt outstanding. The State at first was obliged to borrow money to pay current expenses, but these loans were eventually paid back, and the finances of the State were gradually placed on a good footing. One of the measures of the time was the issuance of a series of bonds, running for thirty years, to take up outstanding indebtedness. These bonds were called Loughborough bonds, after James M. Loughborough, the author of the measure. Another incident was the prompt payment of a series of bonds called Baxter War bonds, issued to pay the expenses of the militia in the recent troubles.

**3. Governor Garland's Administration.** After some passing excitements which marked the beginning of Governor Garland's administration, affairs settled down to undisturbed quiet, which made the remainder of his administration a peaceful and uneventful one. The State in general began to experience prosperity, and considerable progress was made in internal improvements.

**4. William R. Miller, Governor.** The next event of public concern was the election for Governor in September, 1876. At this election William R. Miller, of Batesville, was elected. Governor Miller, who was the twelfth Governor of Arkansas, was born at Batesville, Independence County, Arkansas, November 23d, 1823, and was the first native Arkansian to fill the position of Governor. In 1848 he was elected clerk of Independence County, and served to 1854. At that date he was appointed Auditor by Governor Elias N. Conway, and in 1856 was elected to the position, serving till 1864. He also was Auditor from 1866 to 1868. In 1874 he was again elected to the position and served till he became Governor. He was Governor two

---

3.—What was the course of affairs therein?

4.—Who succeeded him as Governor, and in what year? Give an account of Governor Miller and his public services.

terms, 1876 to 1878, and from 1878 to January, 1881. In 1886 he was for the fifth time elected Auditor, and served as such to November 20th, 1887, at which date he died in Little Rock, aged 65 years.

**5. Rutherford B. Hayes, President.** In the same year, 1876, also occurred an exciting election for President. The candidates of the Republicans were Rutherford B. Hayes, of Ohio, and William A. Wheeler, of Massachusetts. Those of the Democrats were Samuel J. Tilden, of New York, and Thomas A. Hendricks, of Indiana. When the elec-



WILLIAM R. MILLER, TWELFTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE.

tion took place, as both sides claimed it, a Commission was created by Congress to determine the question, called the Electoral Commission, consisting of five Judges of the Supreme Court, five Senators and five Representatives, eight being Republican in politics and seven being Democrats. The Commission decided in favor of Hayes and Wheeler, giving them 185 votes to 184 for Tilden and Hendricks. The vote of Arkansas, in this contest, was given for Tilden and Hendricks.

**6. J. D. Walker, Senator.** Upon the Legislature of 1879 was

5.—What took place at the Presidential election of 1876? Who were the candidates, and what occurrences marked the occasion?

6.—Who was elected Senator to succeed Stephen W. Dorsey, and when?

devolved the duty of electing a United States Senator to succeed Senator Stephen W. Dorsey, for the term of six years, from March, 1879, to March, 1885. J. D. Walker, of Fayetteville, was elected to the position, and served as such for that term.

**7. Governor Miller's Administration.** The Census of 1880. Governor William R. Miller's two terms of office were not marked by any event of prominence, but were characterized by a steady growth of the State in prosperity and advancement. By the time of the second term drawing to a close—to-wit, in the year 1880, the population of the State, in the sixth census, taken in that year, had become 802,525, a gain of 318,054 over the previous census of 1870.

**8. Thomas J. Churchill, Governor.** Governor Miller was succeeded as Governor by Thomas J. Churchill, who was elected in



THOMAS J. CHURCHILL, THIRTEENTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE.

September, 1880. Governor Churchill, who was the thirteenth Governor of the State, was born near Louisville, Kentucky, March 10, 1824, and lived there until he reached manhood. In 1846, at the breaking out of the Mexican War, he enlisted in the First Kentucky Mounted Riflemen, commanded by Colonel Humphrey Marshall, and served therein during that war. After the conclusion of the Mexican War in 1848, he came to Arkansas and located at Little Rock, becoming engaged in planting

---

7.—What was the population of Arkansas in the tenth census? What was the course of affairs during Governor Miller's administration?

8.—Who succeeded Governor Miller as Governor? Give an account of him.

near the city. In the Civil War of 1861 he served with distinction in the Confederate army, becoming a Major-General. In 1874 he was elected State Treasurer, and was re-elected in 1876 and 1878. From Treasurer he became Governor, and served as such for two years, or until the close of 1882, after which time he was engaged in conducting his plantation near Little Rock.

**9. James A. Garfield, President.** The year 1880 was also the year of a Presidential election. The candidates were James A. Garfield, of Ohio, for President, and Chester A. Arthur, of New York, Vice President, the nominees of the Republican party; and General Winfield S. Hancock, of the United States Army, for President, and William H. English, of Indiana, for Vice-President, the nominees of the Democratic party. There were, also, others of the Greenback and the Prohibition parties, but these were the principal ones. Garfield and Arthur were elected. The vote of Arkansas was one of those given for Hancock and English.

**10. The Fishback Amendment.** At the time of Governor Churchill's election there was also submitted to a vote of the people a proposed amendment to the State Constitution, known as Amendment Number One, or commonly called the Fishback Amendment. This amendment, which has been mentioned in a former chapter, prohibited the payment, in either principal or interest, of a large amount of bonds issued by the State and known as Railroad Aid Bonds, and of bonds issued for the funding of the disputed Holford Bonds. At the

---

9.—What is said of the Presidential election of 1880? Who were the candidates and what was the result?

10.—What Amendment to the State Constitution was submitted to the vote of the people in 1880? With what result? What subsequent action took place?

election of 1880 the amendment failed to carry, but at a subsequent election, in 1884, it was again voted on, having been a second time proposed, and at the second election was carried, and now stands as a part of the State Constitution. By means of it the payment of the bonds named is prohibited, the amount of the bonds being \$9,725,846.05.

**11. Assassination of Garfield.** **Chester A. Arthur, President.** The month of July, 1881, was marked by a terrible crime, greatly affecting national affairs, the second of the kind to take place in the history of the United States. President Garfield was assassinated at Washington by Charles J. Guiteau, a disappointed office-seeker and a man of unbalanced mind. The President lived for eighty days after the firing of the fatal shot, and expired at Elberon, New Jersey, September 20th, 1881, in the 50th year of his age. He was buried in Cleveland, Ohio, amid the mourning of the entire nation. Upon his demise Vice-President Arthur became President and administered the government for the remainder of the term.

**12. James H. Berry, Governor.** The administration of Governor Churchill was in the main uneventful, and it drawing to a close in 1882, JUDGE JAMES H. BERRY, of Benton County, was chosen his successor at the regular biennial election of State officers, in September of that year. He was inaugurated before the Legislature in January, 1883, and entered upon the duties of the office of Governor.

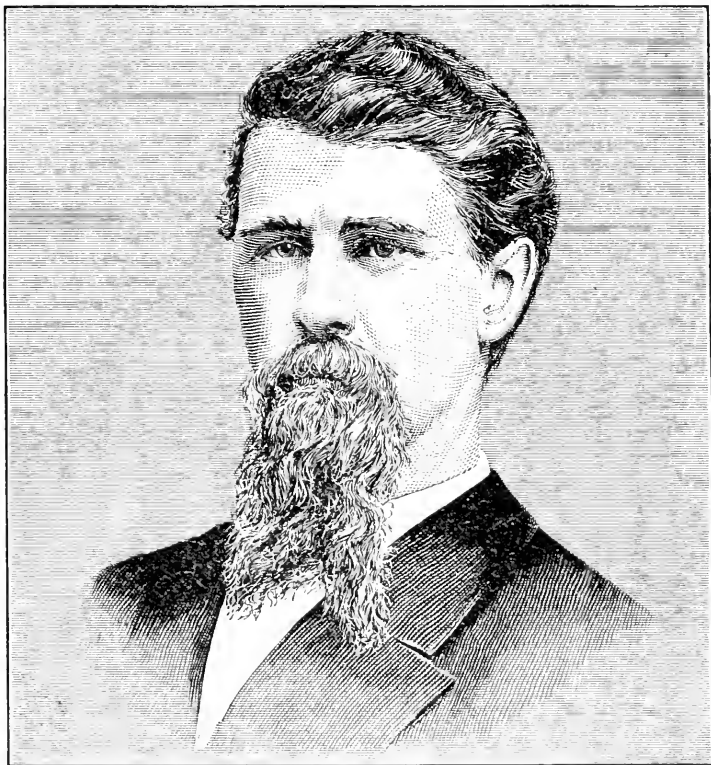
---

**11.**—What terrible crime took place in national affairs in July, 1881? Who then became President?

**12.**—Who succeeded Governor Churchill as Governor, and when?

## CHAPTER XXIII.

*1883 to 1889—The administration of Governor James H. Berry, and that of Governor Simon P. Hughes; two terms.*



JAMES H. BERRY, FOURTEENTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE.

1. Governor James H. Berry, the fourteenth Governor of Arkansas, was born in Jackson County, Alabama, May 15th,

---

CHAPTER XXIII. 1.—Give an account of Governor James H. Berry.

1841. In 1848 his father moved to Arkansas and settled in Carroll County, at what is now Berryville, a town which was named after him. Here James H. Berry grew to manhood. On the breaking out of the war he enlisted in the 16th Arkansas Infantry of the Confederate army, and was second Lieutenant of Company "E" in it. At the battle of Corinth, October 4th, 1862, he was wounded, losing his leg. After the war he taught school and read law, and was admitted to practice in 1866. In 1866 he was elected to the Legislature from Carroll County. In 1869 he moved to Bentonville, Benton County, and practiced law. In 1872 and 1874 he was elected to the Legislature from Benton County, and at the session of 1874 was Speaker of the House. In 1878 he was elected Circuit Judge and served four years. Being elected Governor in 1882 he served two years, and in 1885 was elected United States Senator for the unexpired term of Senator A. H. Garland, from 1885 to 1889. In 1889 he was again elected Senator for a term of six years, ending in 1895.

2. **Cleburne County.** At the session of the Legislature of 1883, Cleburne County, the seventy-sixth county created in the State, was formed out of territory taken from the counties of Van Buren, Independence and White, and was named in honor of General Patrick R. Cleburne. The county seat was located, both temporarily and permanently, at the town of Sugar Loaf. While Cleburne County is the seventy-sixth county created, there are now only 75 counties in existence in the State, by reason of the fact that Loveley County, which was created in 1827, was abolished the following year; but it was a regular county, with a full county government, for a year, and therefore entitled to be numbered as such. Cleburne County is an interior county, north of centre. It lies west of Independence and north of White and Faulkner Counties. Heber, Sugar Loaf and Quitman are its principal towns.



**3. Death of Chief Justice Elbert H. English.** In September, 1884, Judge Elbert H. English, one of the most distinguished judges of the State, died in Asheville, North Carolina, whither he had gone to recuperate his failing health. He was Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of the State from 1854 to 1865, and from 1874 to the date of his death, a period of twenty-one years. He was born near Capshaw's Mountain, Alabama, March 6th, 1816, and came to Arkansas in 1844. At the date of his death he was in the 69th year of his age. His remains were brought to Little Rock and there interred September 7th, 1884, with every possible demonstration of respect for his memory. He was succeeded as Chief Justice by Sterling R. Cockrill, the present incumbent.



ELBERT H. ENGLISH, CHIEF JUSTICE FOR TWENTY-ONE YEARS, ARKANSAS SUPREME COURT.

**4. Grover Cleveland, President.** The year 1884 was the occasion of a Presidential election. The candidates were James G. Blaine, of Maine, for President, and John A. Logan, of Illinois, for Vice-President, nominated by the Republican party; and Grover Cleveland, of New York, for President, and Thomas A. Hendricks, of Indiana, for Vice-President, the nominees of the Democratic party. In the election, which occurred in November, Cleveland and Hendricks were elected. They were the first Democratic candidates elected in twenty-four years. The vote of Arkansas was among those of the States given for them.

---

3.—What is said of Judge E. H. English?

4.—Who was elected President in 1884?



SIMON P. HUGHES, FIFTEENTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE.

5. Simon P. Hughes, Governor. In the regular biennial election for State officers, held in September of the year, SIMON P. HUGHES was elected GOVERNOR, and was inaugurated before the Legislature in January, 1885, the fifteenth Governor of the State. He was born in Smith County, Tennessee, April 14th,

---

5.—Who succeeded Governor James H. Berry as Governor, and when? Give an account of him.

1830. In 1844 his father moved to Arkansas and settled in Pulaski County. Being early thrown on his own resources, he settled in Monroe County, Arkansas, in 1849, and engaged in farming. He also studied law, and in 1857 was admitted to the bar at Clarendon, and practiced law there until 1874, except the time of the war, when he was in the Confederate Army. In 1874 he was elected Attorney-General of the State, and served as such for two years. He was Governor two terms; first from 1885 to 1887, and being elected in 1886 for a second term, served from 1887 to January, 1889, when he was succeeded by James P. Eagle. On the 2d of April, 1889, he was elected Associate Justice of the Supreme Court of the State.

**6. James K. Jones, Senator.** Upon the Legislature of 1885 was devolved the duty of electing a Senator to succeed Senator J. D. Walker, whose term expired in March. James K. Jones, of Washington, was elected to the position, for a term expiring March, 1891.

**7. Governor Hughes' Administration.** The administration of Governor Hughes in the two terms in which he served was one of prosperity and advancement for the State. The State's finances were in good condition; emigration to her limits was steady and continuous; her advantages were attracting attention; railroad building and internal improvements were progressing, and her resources were being developed in a gratifying manner.

**8. Benjamin Harrison, President.** The year 1888 was the occasion of two notable political contests in which the people of Arkansas were concerned. A Presidential election occurred in November, in which the Democratic candidates were President Cleveland, nominated by the Democrats for re-election, and Allen G. Thurman, of Indiana, for Vice-President. Benjamin Har-

6.—Who succeeded Senator J. D. Walker, and for what term?

7.—What is said of the course of Governor Hughes' administration?

8.—Who was elected President in 1888?

rison, of Indiana, a grandson of President William Henry Harrison, for President, and Levi P. Morton, of New York, for Vice-President, were the nominees of the Republican party. Harrison and Morton were the successful candidates in this contest. The vote of Arkansas was cast for Cleveland and Thurman.



JAMES P. EAGLE, SIXTEENTH GOVERNOR OF THE STATE.

9. James P. Eagle, Governor. In the State election in Sep-

9.—Who succeeded Governor S. P. Hughes as Governor, and when?

tember, 1888, James P. Eagle, of Lonoke County, the Democratic nominee, was elected Governor, the sixteenth governor of the State. He was born in Maury County, Tennessee, August 10th, 1837. In 1839 he came with his family to Arkansas and settled in what was then Pulaski County, twenty-three miles northeast from Little Rock. In 1857 he moved to about the same distance east of Little Rock, and in 1857 to the neighborhood of his residence in Lonoke County, being engaged in farming. A part of the time he was a Baptist minister. He was deputy sheriff in Prairie County in 1859, a member of the Legislature from that county in 1873 and 1874, and in the Constitutional Convention of 1874. He represented Lonoke County in 1877 and in 1885, and at this latter session was Speaker of the House. He entered the Confederate army as a private in the ranks, and at the close of the war was Lieutenant-Colonel, and was surrendered with Johnston's army in North Carolina, in April, 1865. He was inaugurated before the Legislature in January, 1889, for a term extending to January, 1891, and at the same time the State officers elected with him were also inducted into office.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

### *Conclusion. General Summary.*

**I. Review.** The foregoing embraces an outline of the history of Arkansas, beginning with the year 1541 to 1889, a period of nearly 350 years. Necessarily such an account can only consist of a general or outline sketch, leaving the student to refer to larger histories for greater fullness of particulars and details. The active history of Arkansas dates from the year 1819, when she was made a Territory, a period now of only 70 years. In that time she has grown from being practically a wilderness, with a few thousands of

---

Give an account of Governor Eagle?

CHAPTER XXIV. 1.—What extent of time is covered by the history of Arkansas? By her active history? From what to what has she grown? Give the population at various dates.

inhabitants widely scattered, to a rapidly-growing commonwealth, with a million or more of population. In the year 1785 a census of inhabitants gave the population of Arkansas at 196 persons. In the year 1799 the population of what was then Arkansas, embracing a larger area than the present State, was returned at 368 persons, and in 1810 at 1062. In 1820 it was 14,255; in 1830, 30,388; in 1840, 97,574; in 1850, 209,897; in 1860, 435,450; in 1870, 484,471; in 1880, 802,525.

2. **The Resources and Advantages of Arkansas** are every year becoming more apparent. In the growth of timber her forest tracts are varied and limitless, containing every variety of wood suitable for use and manufacture. She possesses vast coal-fields, producing an abundant supply of coal of excellent quality. Her mineral resources are abundant and yield largely of valuable ores. In mineral and medicinal springs, and curative waters, she stands unrivalled, and these have caused her to become widely known as a health resort, visited annually from all parts of the world.

3. **In Agricultural Products** she has achieved an enviable fame. The variety of soil embraced within her limits enables her to produce, with remarkable excellence, all that is grown in this particular latitude, and which, when brought into competition with the products of other communities, compares favorably with the best to be shown. In great fairs and exhibitions, like that of the Centennial at Philadelphia in 1876 and at New Orleans in 1884, together with her own home exposition of 1887, the displays of agricultural products made by the State have ranked among the best; while in the production of fruits her displays at Boston in 1887, and in California and Illinois in 1888, have obtained for her the verdict of being one of the very best in the Union.

---

2.—Mention the resources of the State.

3.—What is said of her agricultural products?

**4. In Geographical Situation** her position is excellent. Her entire eastern border is washed by the waters of the great Mississippi, affording an outlet for navigation to the Gulf of Mexico, or to points above; while her own territory is traversed by such considerable rivers as the Arkansas, White, Red, Black, St. Francis, Cache and smaller streams, affording navigation for the greater part of the year, and to some extent at all times, for transportation of products, or for the requirements of travel.

**5. Railroads.** Beside the advantages of her waterways her inland extent is penetrated in many directions by railroads, with more likely to follow; furnishing facilities for intercourse and commerce by this greatest of all modern achievements, travel by rail. Already her surface is traversed by such considerable lines as the St. Louis, Iron Mountain and Southern, and the St. Louis, Arkansas and Texas Railroads; the latter built in 1881 to 1883, both extending across the State in a southwesterly course, from the Missouri line to Texas; the Memphis and Little Rock Railroad; the Little Rock, Mississippi River and Texas Railroad, from Fort Smith to Arkansas City, in a southeasterly course, then turning westward to Warren and beyond; built from Little Rock to Fort Smith from 1868 to 1876; from Pine Bluff to Arkansas City, 1869 to 1873 or thereabout, and the central division completed from Pine Bluff to Little Rock in 1881-1882; the St. Louis and San Francisco; the Kansas City, Fort Scott and Memphis; the Helena and Iron Mountain Railroads, and others.

**6. Educational Facilities.** In point of excellence of her educational facilities the State has attained a high rank. At the time of the entrance of the State into the Union, in 1836, Congress made a grant of lands to aid in the cause of education, which constituted the beginning of the common school system of the State. This fund was administered from time to time by direction of

---

4.—What of her geographical position? Her rivers?

5.—Railroads?

6.—Give an account of the progress of education in the State. What

the Legislature, and other means were provided for contributing to advance education, until the present system came actively into existence from 1868 to 1873, under the able direction of Superintendent Thomas Smith. It was brought to an advanced state of improvement from 1878, by the zeal and energy of Superintendent James L. Denton and his successors, until it has reached its present state of progress. In furtherance of the general cause the State has established a splendid Industrial University at Fayetteville, having a branch Medical Department at Little Rock, and has established at Pine Bluff a Normal College for the education of colored teachers. Beside the public school system, there are many private and denominational schools of excellence throughout the State, among which may be named the Ouachita College at Arkadelphia; the University, the Commercial College, and the Arkansas Female College at Little Rock; the Galloway Female College, and the Searcy College, at Searcy; the Collegiate Institute at La Crosse; the Christian College at Pinnacle Springs; the Arkansas College at Batesville; Academies, High Schools and Institutes at Quitman, Belleville, Marianna, Bentonville, Booneville, Monticello, Pine Bluff, Prairie Grove, and at many other points; and for the colored race the Philander Smith College at Little Rock, an institution established by private munificence.

**7. Distinguished Citizens.** While her natural advantages are great, and a source of gratification to her citizens, she has also cause for satisfaction that among her citizens themselves, either native-born, or else living such portion of their lives in her limits as to be identified with her destiny and fortunes, there have been many who have attained eminence, of whom there may be noted among her distinguished judges, Benjamin Johnson, Elbert H. English and Henry C. Caldwell; among her prominent lawyers,

---

institutions have been established by the State? Mention some of the principal private and denominational institutions of the State.

**7.**—Mention some of her citizens who have attained eminence in various spheres.



Augustus H. Garland and U. M. Rose; among her distinguished physicians, Dr. Elias R. Du Val; among her notable statesmen, Ambrose H. Sevier, Robert W. Johnson, the Conways, Henry W. and Elias N., William R. Miller, James H. Berry, James K. Jones and Clifton R. Breckenridge; among eloquent orators, Robert Crittenden and John R. Fellows; among scholars and literary men, and as a poet, Albert Pike; among eloquent and persuasive divines, Reverends A. R. Winfield and Robert H. Read; among classical and polished writers, Wyatt C. Thomas and John R. Eakin; among men of public administrative affairs, Wharton and Elias Rector, who, in conducting Indian affairs of earlier times, merited distinction and received public acknowledgment; among gallant commanders, Archibald Yell and Patrick R. Cleburne; among artists, C. P. Washburne and William Quesenbury; among editors, William E. Woodruff, Senior, and Opie P. Read, the latter of whom, while the editor of an Arkansas newspaper, achieved not only a state-wide, but a national reputation, as one of the leading humorists of his day.



ALBERT PIKE

**8. Climate.** To her natural advantages may further be mentioned the fact that her climate is such as to present many points of attractiveness. Being situated in an intermediate latitude it is not marked either by the extreme cold of northern climates or the extreme heat of more southern countries. It is relieved of heavy and continuous snows on the one hand, and of long-continued and parching droughts on the other, but possesses a mediate temperature highly conducive to vegetation. These advantages, combining with the general progress and growth of the nation at large, give promise of advancing Arkansas, at no distant day, to a high position in the great sisterhood of States.

---

**8.**—What is said of her climate? Of her future prospects?

## REVIEW QUESTIONS.

## (PERIOD VI.)

CHAPTER XX. 1.—What was the condition of affairs at the restoration of peace?

2.—What were the Reconstruction Measures of Congress?

3.—What is said of the Constitution of 1868?

4.—Who was elected Governor under this Constitution? Give an account of him.

5.—What is said of Little River County?

6.—Of Sharp County?

7.—Mention some public measures of this time.

8.—What is said of Grant County?

9.—Of Boone County?

10.—What was the population of Arkansas in the census of 1870?

11.—What is said of Nevada County?

12.—Of Logan County?

13.—Of Lincoln County?

14.—Of the St. Louis, Iron Mountain and Southern Railroad?

CHAPTER XXI. 1.—Who succeeded Governor Clayton, and when? Give an account of him.

2.—What Presidential election took place in 1872?

3.—Who was elected Governor at the time?

4.—Give an account of him.

5.—Of his administration. Of transactions therein.

6.—What is said of Clay County?

7.—Of Baxter County?

8.—Of Garland County?

9.—Of Faulkner County?

10.—Of Lonoke County?

11.—Of Cleveland County?

12.—Of Howard County?

13.—Of Lee County?

14.—Of Stone County?

15.—Of the Brooks and Baxter war? By what means was a new Constitution promulgated? Who became Governor under this Constitution?

CHAPTER XXII. 1.—Give an account of Governor Garland?

2.—What is said of State financial matters?

3.—Of Governor Garland's administration?

- 4.—Who next was Governor? Give an account of him.
  - 5.—What Presidential election took place in 1876?
  - 6.—What Senatorial succession in 1879?
  - 7.—What is said of Governor Miller's administration? What was the population of Arkansas in 1880?
  - 8.—Who next was Governor? Give an account of him.
  - 9.—What Presidential election was held in 1880?
  - 10.—What public measure was voted on at this date?
  - 11.—Who next became President of the United States? Following what event?
  - 12.—Who next was Governor of Arkansas?
- CHAPTER XXIII. 1.—Give an account of Governor Berry.
- 2.—What is said of Cleburne County?
  - 3.—What distinguished judge died in 1884? Give an account of him.
  - 4.—What Presidential election took place in 1884?
  - 5.—Who next was Governor of Arkansas? Give an account of him.
  - 6.—What Senatorial succession took place in 1885?
  - 7.—What is said of Governor Hughes' administration?
  - 8.—What Presidential election took place in 1888?
  - 9.—Who was elected Governor in that year? Give an account of him.
- CHAPTER XXIV. 1.—What length of time is covered by the history of Arkansas? Give a summary of population at various dates.
- 2.—What is said of the resources and advantages of Arkansas?
  - 3.—Of her agricultural products?
  - 4.—Of her geographical situation?
  - 5.—Of her railroads?
  - 6.—Of her educational facilities?
  - 7.—Of her distinguished citizens?
  - 8.—Of her climate and future prospects?

## APPENDIX A.

### *LIST OF GOVERNORS OF ARKANSAS, AND OF THE COUNTRY OUT OF WHICH ARKANSAS WAS FORMED.*

#### GOVERNORS OF THE PROVINCE OF LOUISIANA.

##### *FRENCH GOVERNORS.*

Robert Cavelier, Sieur de la Salle was the first person appointed Commandant of Louisiana, April 14th, 1684. but he never lived to reach the country to discharge the duties of the office. He was murdered in Texas, March 20th, 1687.

1699 to July 22d, 1701. M. de Sauvolle.

1701 to 1712. Jean Baptiste Le Moyne, Sieur de Bienville.

1712 to 1716. La Mothe Cadillac.

1716 to 1718. De L'Epinay.

1718 to 1724. Jean Baptiste Le Moyne, Sieur de Bienville.

1724 to 1726. Boisbriant, in the absence of Bienville.

1726 to 1734. Perier.

1734 to 1742. Jean Baptiste Le Moyne, Sieur de Bienville.

1742 to 1752. Pierre de Rigaud, Marquis de Vaudreuil.

1752 to 1762. The Baron de Kerlerec.

1762 to 1765. D'Abbadie.

1765. Aubry, the last French Governor.

##### *SPANISH GOVERNORS.*

The Province of Louisiana was ceded by France to Spain in 1763, but Spain did not take possession until 1768, Monsieur Aubry remaining in charge up to that date, and governing jointly with Ulloa.

1766. Antonio de Ulloa appointed Governor, but upon coming in that year to take possession of the Province, was expelled by the French colonists, in October, 1768.

1769 to 1770. Count Alexander O'Reilly.

1770 to 1777. Luys de Unzaga.

1777 to 1784. Bernardo de Galvez.

1784 to 1791. Estevan Miro.

1791 to 1797. Francisco Luys Hector, Baron de Carondelet.

1797 to 1799. Manuel Gayoso de Lemos.

1799 to 1801. Sebastian de Casa Calvo.

1801 to 1803. Juan Manuel de Salcedo.

In the year 1800 the Province of Louisiana was retro-ceded by Spain to France, but the French did not take immediate possession. Instead, the country remained under the Spanish authorities until November 30th, 1803, when, in the name of Spain, the Marquis de Casa Calvo, as commissioner, with Governor de Salcedo, delivered possession of the country to Citizen Pierre Clement Laussat, as the representative of France. On the 20th of December, 1803, twenty days after the delivery to him, Citizen Laussat delivered formal possession of the country to commissioners of the United States, by which Government the country had been purchased from France.

#### **AMERICAN GOVERNORS**

**Of the Province of Louisiana.** December 20th, 1803, to March 26th, 1804. William C. C. Claiborne.

**Of the District of Louisiana.** Formed March 26th, 1804.

March 26th, 1804, to March 3d, 1805. William Henry Harrison, as Governor of Indiana Territory.

**Of the Territory of Louisiana.** Formed March 3d, 1805.

March 3d, 1805 to 1807. James Wilkinson.

1807 to 1809. Merriwether Lewis.

1809 to June 4th, 1812. Benjamin A. Howard.

**Of Missouri Territory.** Formed June 4th, 1812.

June 4th, 1812, to October 31, 1812. Benjamin A. Howard.

October 31st, 1812, to July 4th, 1819. William Clark, but with Frederick Bates, secretary, as Acting Governor in 1818.

**Of Arkansas Territory.** Formed July 4th, 1819.

July 4th, 1819 to 1825. James Miller. Robert Crittenden as Acting Governor at intervals.

1825 to 1828. George Izard.

1828 to 1829. Robert Crittenden, Acting Governor.

1829 to 1835. John Pope.

1835 to 1836. William S. Fulton.

**Of the State of Arkansas.** Created June 15th-16th, 1836.

1836 to 1840. James S. Conway.

1840 to April 29th, 1844. Archibald Yell.

April 29th to November 9th, 1844. Samuel Adams, Acting Governor.

November 9th, 1844, to November, 1848. Thomas S. Drew.

November, 1848, to January 10th, 1849. Thomas S. Drew.

January 10th to April 19th, 1849. Richard C. Byrd, Acting Governor.

April 19th, 1849, to 1852. John Selden Roane.

1852 to 1856. Elias N. Conway.

1856 to 1860. Elias N. Conway.

1860 to November 4th, 1862. Henry M. Rector.

November 4th to November 15th, 1862. Thomas Fletcher, of Arkansas County, Acting Governor.

November 15th, 1862, to 1865. Harris Flanagin, Confederate Governor.

April, 1864, to July, 1868. Isaac Murphy.

July, 1868, to March 14th, 1871. Powell Clayton.

March 14th, 1871, to January, 1873. Ozro A. Hadley, Acting Governor.

January, 1873, to November 12th, 1874. Elisha Baxter.

November 12th, 1874, to January 11th, 1877. Augustus H. Garland.

January 11th, 1877, to January, 1879. William R. Miller.

January, 1879, to January, 1881. William R. Miller.

January, 1881, to January, 1883. Thomas J. Churchill.

January, 1883, to January, 1885. James H. Berry.

January, 1885, to January, 1887. Simon P. Hughes.

January, 1887, to January, 1889. Simon P. Hughes.

January, 1889, to January, 1891. James P. Eagle.

## SEARCH QUESTION.

Under what Presidents of the United States did the foregoing American Governors serve, from the year 1803?

---

For list of Presidents see page 100.

## APPENDIX B.

### CHRONOLOGICAL SUMMARY OF LEADING EVENTS.

#### *I.—THE COLONIAL PERIOD.*

1541. First white person in Arkansas. De Soto traverses the country in his wanderings.

1673. Marquette and Joliet's exploring expedition descends to the mouth of the Arkansas River.

1680. Father Hennepin's exploring expedition descends the Mississippi River, probably to the mouth of the Arkansas River.

1682. La Salle, with an exploring expedition, descends to the mouth of the Mississippi River and (April 9th) claims possession of all the country, calling it Louisiana. He returns to France to bring back a colony.

1684. La Salle, sailing from France with a colony, endeavors to find the mouth of the Mississippi River, but by mistake sails too far west, and lands (January, 1685) on the coast of Texas.

1686. De Tonti goes to the mouth of the Mississippi to meet La Salle, but failing to find him ascends the river to place of starting. On reaching the Arkansas River, on the return journey, six men of his party settle on its banks, about where Arkansas Post now is, and build a house. First white settlement in Arkansas.

1687. Death of La Salle. Joutel, commanding the remnant of the expedition, arrives (July 24th) at the Post established by De Tonti's men on the banks of the Arkansas River. The party shortly afterwards goes to the upper Mississippi, leaving three Frenchmen at the Arkansas Post.



1698. Iberville obtains a patent from the King of France to establish intercourse with Louisiana, and brings over colonists.

1699. M. de Sauvolle is appointed Governor. First Colonial Governor of Louisiana.

1701. Death of Sauvolle. Bienville becomes Governor.

1712. Bienville is succeeded by Cadillac as Governor.

1716. De L'Epimay becomes Governor, succeeding Cadillac.

1718. Bienville becomes Governor a second time. He founds New Orleans and makes it the Capital of the Province. John Law establishes a Duchy on the banks of the Arkansas River, near its mouth, in the neighborhood of the Quapaw settlement.

1720. John Law's schemes failing, his settlement is abandoned and the colonists are dispersed.

1722. Bernard de la Harpe explores the Arkansas River. First known exploration.

1724. Bienville is relieved of command, and Boisbriant and then Perrier (1726) succeed.

1734. Bienville is Governor the third time. He is defeated (1740) in a war with the Chickasaws and returns to France.

1742. Pierre de Rigaud, Marquis de Vaudreuil, is Governor.

1752. The Baron de Kerlerec becomes Governor.

1762. D'Abbadie is appointed Governor.

1763. All of Louisiana west of the Mississippi River is ceded to Spain by France in the Treaty of Paris, after France had held possession of it for eighty-one years. The Spanish delay taking possession. About this time Arkansas Post begins to be settled as a town.

1765. Death of D'Abbadie. Aubry succeeds as Governor.

1768. Aubry, as the representative of France, delivers Louisiana to Spain. Ulloa takes charge, but is expelled by the French colonists.

1769. Count Alexander O'Reilly is appointed Governor.

1770. Luys de Unzaga, Governor.

1777. Bernardo de Galvez is Governor.

1784. Estevan Miro is Governor.

1791. The Baron de Carondelet is Governor

1797. Gayoso de Lemos, Governor.

1799. Sebastian de Casa Calvo, Governor.

1800. Spain having owned Louisiana for thirty-seven years, re-trocedes it to France in the Treaty of St. Ildefonso (Oct. 1st). Although owning the country France does not take possession, but leaves the Spanish Governor, the Marquis de Casa Calvo, in charge.

1801. Juan Manuel de Salcedo becomes Governor. The last Spanish Governor.

1803. Louisiana is purchased from France (April 30th) by the United States. The United States engages to pay \$11,250,000 to France, equivalent to 60,000,000 francs, and \$3,750,000 to American citizens for spoliation claims, equivalent to 20,000,000 francs; total to be paid in both directions, \$15,000,000, or 80,000,000 francs.

1803, November 30th. The Marquis de Casa Calvo, as the representative of Spain, with Governor de Salcedo, delivers possession of Louisiana to Citizen Pierre Clement Laussat, as the representative of France.

1803, December 20th. Citizen Pierre Clement Laussat, as the Representative of France, delivers possession of the country to the American Commissioners, Governor William C. C. Claiborne and General James Wilkinson. Governor Claiborne assumes the government of the country and issues an address. First American Governor of the Province of Louisiana.

*II.—THE ANTE-TERRITORIAL PERIOD.*

1804, March 26. Territory of Orleans being what is now the State of Louisiana, formed out of the lower part of the Province north to 33 degrees of latitude, and District of Louisiana formed out of the remainder. William Henry Harrison, as Governor of Indiana Territory, Governor of the District of Louisiana.

1805, March 3. Territory of Louisiana formed out of what was previously the District of Louisiana. James Wilkinson, Governor. The present State of Arkansas and the lower part of the present State of Missouri laid off into the District of New Madrid.

1806, June 27. The District of "Arkansaw," formed out of the District of New Madrid, being nearly all of the present State of Arkansas.

1806. Lieutenant James B. Wilkinson explores the Arkansas River from the territory of the Kanes or Kans Indians to the mouth of the river. First official exploration of the river after the purchase of the country from France.

1807. Merriwether Lewis, Governor of Territory of Louisiana.

1808. First treaty with the Osage Indians, negotiated by Pierre Chouteau. A large part of Arkansas, north of the Arkansas River, obtained thereby.

1809. Benjamin A. Howard, Governor of Territory of Louisiana.

1811-1812. The New Madrid Earthquake.

1812. Missouri Territory formed. William Clark, Governor from October 31st.

1812. Edward Hempstead elected delegate to Congress. First delegate from Missouri Territory.

1813, December 31. Arkansas County formed by the Legislature of Missouri Territory. First county formed of those now composing the State of Arkansas.

1815. Lawrence County created.

1817. First postoffices established in Arkansas. At Davidsonville, Lawrence County, June 28th, Adam Ritchey, postmaster. At Arkansas Post, July 1st, 1817, Eli J. Lewis, postmaster.

1817. Treaty with the Cherokee Indians, negotiated by General Andrew Jackson, by which they are located on the upper waters of the Arkansas and White Rivers. A tract of 4,000,000 acres given them.

1818, August 24th. First Treaty with the Quapaws. A large part of Arkansas, south of the Arkansas River, obtained thereby. A reservation of a central portion, 1,500,000 acres, made by the Indians.

1818, September 25th. Second Treaty with the Osages. The upper left-hand corner of Arkansas, west of the former grant, obtained thereby.

1818. Frederick Bates, Acting Governor of Missouri Territory.

1818, December 15th. Pulaski, Clark and Hempstead Counties created.

1819, March 2d. Arkansas Territory formed, to be in effect from July 4th, 1819. The Territorial Capital is established at the Post of Arkansas, on the Arkansas River. James Miller appointed Governor; Robert Crittenden Secretary. Mr. Crittenden repairs to the Territory, and, as Acting Governor, organizes the Territorial Government.

### III.—THE TERRITORIAL PERIOD.

1819, July 28th. First session of the Legislature of Arkansas Territory held. It consists of Robert Crittenden, Secretary, acting as Governor in the absence of Governor Miller, Judges Charles Jouett, Robert P. Letcher and Andrew Scott. They pass necessary laws for the government of the Territory, and the necessary officers being appointed, the Territory begins its official life.

1819, October. William E. Woodruff, Sr., founds the Arkansas Gazette at the Post of Arkansas. First newspaper in Arkansas.

1819, November 20th. James Woodson Bates elected delegate to Congress; the first delegate in Congress from Arkansas Territory.

1819, December 26th. Governor James Miller reaches the Territory of Arkansas and assumes the functions of his office at Arkansas Post; Robert Crittenden having acted as Governor up to this time.

1820, January. The Superior or United States Court is established in Arkansas, sitting at the Post of Arkansas; Judges Benjamin Johnson and Andrew Scott presiding.

1820, October 18th. Generals Andrew Jackson and Thomas Hinds, at Doak's Stand in Mississippi, conclude a treaty with the Choctaw Indians, by which a large portion of the western part of the Territory of Arkansas is ceded to the Choctaws. Great dissatisfaction among the inhabitants of the Territory, and many move into Texas or Mexico.

1820. Counties of Miller, Phillips, Crawford and Independence created.

1820. The Territorial Capital is moved to Little Rock, the Act taking effect June 1, 1821.

1823-1824. The northern boundary line of Arkansas, or dividing line between Arkansas and Missouri, is surveyed by Joseph C. Brown, a Surveyor.

1823. Chicot County created.

1824, May 26th. Congress adds to the western border of Arkansas Territory a strip forty miles wide, extending from the Missouri line to Red River.

1824. Second treaty with the Quapaw Indians, negotiated by Robert Crittenden, by which their title to lands in Arkansas becomes extinct. The reservation of 1,500,000 acres previously made by them in the centre of the Territory, is ceded by them. They move out of Arkansas and settle on Bayou Teche in Louisiana.

1825. General George Izard is appointed Governor; Robert Crittenden remaining Secretary.

1825, January 20th. Treaty with the Choctaw Indians, negotiated by John C. Calhoun, Secretary of State, by which the western boundary line of Arkansas Territory, from the Arkansas to Red River, is established at its present location. Five million thirty thousand nine hundred and twelve acres of the land previously granted to them is ceded by them; in exchange for which they get the territory south of the Arkansas River added to Arkansas by the Act of Congress of 1824, and also the part east thereof to the present boundary line of the State.

1825. Western boundary line of Arkansas surveyed by James S. Conway.

1825. Counties of Conway, Crittenden and Izard created.

1827. Counties of Loveley, St. Francis and Lafayette created.

1828. First steamboat to navigate the Arkansas River. Captain Philip Pennywit, commanding the steamer "Facility," reaches Little Rock in the month of January. He navigates White River for the first time, in the Winter of 1830-1831, reaching Batesville in January, 1831.

1828, May 6th. Treaty with the Cherokee Indians, negotiated by James Barbour, Secretary of War, by which they are moved out of Arkansas. The dividing line between Arkansas and the Cherokees is agreed to be a line running from Fort Smith, northwesterly, to the southwest corner of Missouri, as at present.

1828. Loveley County abolished, being lost in the Cherokee treaty.

1828. Counties of Sevier and Washington created.

1829. John Pope, from Kentucky, appointed Governor. William Savin Fulton, native of Maryland, but coming from Florence, Alabama, appointed Secretary.

1829. Counties of Pope, Union, Hot Spring, Monroe, Jefferson and Jackson created.

1830, November to January, 1831. Southern boundary line of Arkansas, or dividing line between Arkansas and Louisiana, surveyed by James S. Conway and William Pelham, commissioners for Arkansas, and R. A. Crane, commissioner for Louisiana.

1833. Great freshet in the rivers. The building of the State-house begun. The falling of the stars.

1833. Counties of Mississippi, Carroll, Pike, Greene, Scott, Van Buren and Johnson created.

1833. The Quapaws being unfavorably located in Louisiana, return to Arkansas. Third treaty with them, by which they are moved to the Indian Territory, where they now are.

1835. William S. Fulton appointed Governor; Lewis Randolph appointed Secretary.

1835. Counties of White, Randolph, Saline and Marion created.

1836. Arkansas is admitted into the Union as a State. The bill for her admission passes June 15th, and is approved by the President June 16th, 1836.

#### IV.—THE ANTE-BELLUM PERIOD.

1836. James S. Conway elected Governor. First Governor of the State. Daniel Ringo, Chief Justice of Supreme Court.

1836. Archibald Yell elected delegate to Congress. First delegate from the State of Arkansas.

1836. Ambrose H. Sevier and William S. Fulton elected Senators. First Senators in Congress from Arkansas.

1836, October 26th to November 2d. The Legislature creates two Banks—the State Bank and the Real Estate Bank, and issues her bonds to be sold by them to constitute their banking capital. After a few years both of these banks fail, and involve many persons in embarrassment and debt.

1836. Counties of Madison and Benton created.

1836. Martin Van Buren elected President. First electoral vote of Arkansas; given for him.

1837. County of Franklin created.

1838. Counties of Pomsett, Desha and Searcy created.

1840. Boundary line between Arkansas and Texas surveyed by John R. Conway; being that which is south of Red River.

1840. The Real Estate Bank, in order to borrow money to pay maturing interest on bonds, hypothecates or pledges, to the North American Trust and Banking Company, 500 State bonds of \$1000 each, remaining in its hands unsold; receiving about \$121,000 as a loan, the bonds standing as security therefor. Without giving the Real Estate Bank an opportunity to redeem the security and pay the debt, the North American Trust and Banking Company, in bad faith, transfers these bonds to James Holford, a banker of London, and having done so, makes an assignment and fails. The State afterwards refuses to pay these bonds, or interest on them, in the hands of Holford, on the ground of want of consideration, and their having been hypothecated contrary to law.

1840. Archibald Yell, Governor.

1840. Counties of Yell, Bradley and Perry created.

1840. William Henry Harrison elected President. The electoral vote of Arkansas is for Van Buren, his opponent.

1842. Counties of Ouachita, Montgomery, Newton and Fulton created.

1844-1845. The northern boundary line of Arkansas, or dividing line between Arkansas and Missouri, is surveyed for the second time by Davis Thompson, commissioner for Arkansas, and Governor Dunklin first, and after his death, Dr. George Penn, commissioners for Missouri.

1844. Samuel Adams, President of the Senate, becomes Acting Governor on the resignation of Governor Yell. Thomas S. Drew elected Governor. Thomas Johnson, Chief Justice of Supreme Court.

1844. James K. Polk elected President. The electoral vote of Arkansas is among those cast for him.

1844. Polk County created.



1845. Dallas County created.

1846. The Mexican War breaks out. Arkansas furnishes troops therefor. Governor Archibald Yell commands a regiment of cavalry.

1846. Counties of Prairie, Drew and Ashley created.

1847. Battle of Buena Vista. Colonel Yell is killed, and Lieutenant-Colonel John Selden Roane commands the regiment, becoming Colonel.

1848. Conclusion of the Mexican War.

1848. General Zachary Taylor is elected President. The electoral vote of Arkansas is for Lewis Cass, his opponent.

1849. Governor Drew resigns, and Richard C. Byrd becomes Acting Governor, being President of the Senate. At a special election John Selden Roane is elected Governor.

1849. Death of Benjamin Johnson, a Federal Judge in Arkansas since 1820. Daniel Ringo, his successor.

1850. Calhoun County created.

1851. Sebastian County created.

1852. Elias Nelson Conway elected Governor. George C. Watkins, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court.

1852. Columbia County created.

1852. Franklin Pierce is elected President. The vote of Arkansas is among those cast for him.

1854. Surveys of Cairo and Fulton, Memphis and Little Rock, and Little Rock and Fort Smith Railroads made. First actual movement towards railroad building in the State.

1854. George C. Watkins resigns as Chief Justice of the Supreme Court. Elbert H. English, his successor.

1856. Elias N. Conway elected Governor a second time. A considerable amount of levying, ditching and reclaiming of public lands is done during his term of service.

1856. James Buchanan is elected President. The vote of Arkansas is among those cast for him.

1858. First railroad building in Arkansas. Section from Hopefield, opposite Memphis, to Madison, completed and operated.

1859-1860. Railroad built from Little Rock to Devall's Bluff. The central division not completed. The route of travel is from Madison by stage, or from Memphis to Devall's Bluff by boat; from there to Little Rock by rail.

1859. Craighead County created.

1860. Judge Henry M. Rector, running as an independent Democratic candidate for Governor, is elected over Richard H. Johnson, the regular nominee.

1860. First telegraph line established in Arkansas. From Memphis to Little Rock.

1860. By this date political affairs in the Nation have so shaped themselves as to produce an intense excitement. Constant agitation of the subject of slavery has brought the country to the verge of distraction. The political party at the North, opposed to slavery, has grown so strong, that, owing to a split in the Democratic party, it seems about to elect its candidate President, there being four candidates for that office—to-wit: Breckinridge and Douglas, Democratic; Lincoln, Republican; and Bell, Union. The land is fairly ablaze with excitement.

1860, November. Abraham Lincoln, the candidate of the party opposed to slavery, is elected President. South Carolina (1860) and other Southern or slave-holding States (1861) pass ordinances of secession and withdraw from the Union and form a Southern Confederacy. The Legislature of Arkansas calls a convention to determine what course Arkansas ought to pursue in the existing crisis.

1861, March 4th. The convention assembles. Its sentiments are for the Union. It refuses to secede, but agrees to submit to a vote of the people the question whether they will withdraw from the Union or not. The general sentiment of the people is for the Union.

*V.—THE PERIOD OF THE CIVIL WAR.*

1861, April. Before the people have had an opportunity to vote on the question of whether they will withdraw from the Union or not, the war actually begins. The United States Government attempting to reinforce Fort Sumter in Charleston Harbor, the fort is fired on by troops of the Southern Confederacy. President Lincoln issues a proclamation, calling for 75,000 volunteers to put down the rebellion, and calls on the State of Arkansas to furnish part of them. This entirely changes the Union sentiment in the State. The people now become practically unanimous in favor of secession. Governor Rector refuses the demand for troops. The convention re-assembles and (May 6th) passes an ordinance of secession by a vote of 69 to 1. Isaac Murphy, delegate from Madison County, is the only delegate who votes in the negative. Arkansas joins the Southern Confederacy. From first to last 50,000 men from the State enter the service on the Confederate side, and Arkansas troops are in all parts of the wide theatre of war.

1862, March 7th. Battle of Elk Horn or Pea Ridge in Benton County. A drawn battle.

1862, November. The term of office of Henry M. Rector comes to a close by reason of a defect in the law creating it. Thomas Fletcher of Arkansas County becomes Acting Governor. Harris Flanagan is elected Governor at a special election.

1862. Counties of Cross and Woodruff created.

1862, December 7th. Battle of Prairie Grove in Washington County. A Confederate success.

1863, January 1st. All slaves in the United States are set free by the proclamation of President Lincoln.

1863, January 11th. Capture of Arkansas Post by the Federal General McClernand, taking 3000 prisoners.

1863, July 4th. Battle of Helena. The Confederates are defeated with great loss. 7

1863, September 10th. The Federal General Steele having advanced into the interior from Helena, captures Little Rock. The Confederates retreat southward. Unsuccessful attack on Pine Bluff (October 25th) by Confederate General Marmaduke.

1864. A State government is instituted by the Federal authorities. A State Constitution is put into effect. Isaac Murphy of Madison County is made Governor. T. D. W. Yonley, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court. The United States Court is reopened. Henry C. Caldwell, Judge. The Federals occupy about two-thirds of the State.

1864. General Steele, having wintered at Little Rock, sets out in the Spring to penetrate further into the interior. He is checked in a sharp engagement at Marks' Mills, April 25th, and is worsted in an engagement at Jenkins' Ferry, April 30th. He retreats to Little Rock.

1864, September 1st. The Confederate General Price about this date starts from southwest Arkansas on a raid into Missouri. The expedition is fruitless, and late in the Autumn returns to Arkansas.

1865. End of the War. The Confederacy having fallen and its armies surrendered, all who were engaged therein return home to the pursuits of peace.

#### *VI.—THE PERIOD SINCE THE WAR.*

1865-1866. Andrew Johnson is President. The course of National affairs is looked to with considerable solicitude. The Murphy Government, however, is pacific and prosperous.

1866. David Walker, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court.

1867, March 2d. Congress passes "an Act for the more efficient government of the Rebel States," being one of the measures called the Reconstruction Measures. By it many thousands of citizens in Arkansas are denied the privilege of voting, on account of their having taken part in the war on the Confederate side. The States of the South are placed under military

rule. Arkansas and Mississippi are joined as the Fourth Military District, under the command of General E. O. C. Ord. Arkansas is made a sub-district, under General Alvan C. Gillem.

1867. Little River County created.

1868. An election is held under military auspices for a new Constitution and State officers under the Reconstruction Act.

1868, July. The Constitution in effect and Powell Clayton Governor. The State passes into Republican control. W. W. Wilshire, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court.

1868. County of Sharp created.

1868, October 6th. The Governor issues a proclamation, declaring invalid, and setting aside, the registration in the counties of Ashley, Bradley, Columbia, Hot Spring, Lafayette, Mississippi, Woodruff, Sharp, Craighead, Sevier and Greene, and (November 1st) Randolph.

1868, November 3d. General U. S. Grant elected President of the United States. The electoral vote of Arkansas is among those cast for him.

1868, November 4th. The Governor issues a proclamation, declaring martial law to exist in the counties of Ashley, Bradley, Columbia, Lafayette, Mississippi, Woodruff, Craighead, Greene, Sevier, and Little River; in the counties of Fulton (November 7th), Drew (November 10th), Conway (December 8th), and Crittenden (December 28th), fourteen counties. Militia forces are sent to and occupy several of these counties.

1868-1869. Proclamations revoking martial law are made by the Governor, as follows: As to Sevier County (December 2d), Fulton (December 14th), Little River and Lafayette, east of Red River (December 19th), Conway (December 24th), Columbia and Lafayette, west of Red River (January 9th, 1869), Woodruff (January 19th), Ashley, Bradley, and Drew (February

3d), Mississippi (February 13th), Craighead and Greene, (February 17th), and Crittenden (March 21st).

1869. The railroad completed to Memphis.

1869. Counties of Grant and Boone created.

1869. The Little Rock and Fort Smith Railroad built to Clarksville.

1869-1873. Line of railroad from Pine Bluff to Arkansas City and westward, built about this date.

1870-1873. The St. Louis, Iron Mountain and Southern Railroad built diagonally across the State, from northeast to southwest.

1871. Governor Clayton being elected United States Senator, is succeeded by Ozro A. Hadley, President of the Senate, as Acting Governor. John McClure, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court.

1871. Counties of Nevada, Sarber (now called Logan) and Lincoln created.

1872-1873. Railroad bridge across the river at Little Rock built. First bridge across the Arkansas River.

1872. Elisha Baxter of Batesville elected Governor after a spirited canvass, his opponent being Joseph Brooks, a Reform Republican. He is inaugurated as Governor January, 1873.

1872, November. U. S. Grant elected President a second time.

1873. The counties of Clayton (now called Clay), Baxter, Garland, Faulkner, Lonoke, Dorsey (now called Cleveland), Howard, Lee and Stone created.

1874, April 15th. Joseph Brooks, claiming to be elected Governor, and having obtained a decision in his favor to that effect in the Circuit Court of Pulaski County, goes to the Statehouse with a few followers and ejects Governor Baxter from the Governor's apartments, and occupies them, styling himself Governor

of Arkansas. Governor Baxter declares Martial law and orders out the militia. Both parties appeal to President Grant for recognition. Baxter orders the Legislature to meet in extra session. They assemble and recognize Baxter as the rightful Governor. Thereupon President Grant recognizes him also, and issues a proclamation (May 15th), calling on Brooks' followers to disperse within ten days. This is done and Baxter resumes the occupancy of the Statehouse. The Legislature calls a Constitutional Convention, which Baxter approves.

1874, July 14th. The Convention meets and adopts a new Constitution, to be submitted to a vote of the people.

1874, October 30th. The Constitution is adopted by the vote of the people. A. H. Garland is elected Governor thereunder. The State comes again into Democratic control. E. H. English, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court.

1874. Upon the inauguration of Governor Garland, V. V. Smith, Lieutenant-Governor with Baxter under the Constitution of 1868, declares himself Governor as successor to Baxter. The matter is brought before Congress, which sends a committee to investigate. The committee reports in favor of the Garland government.

1874. On beginning her career, under the new Constitution, the State's Treasury is entirely empty, and a large public debt is outstanding. The State is obliged to borrow money to pay current expenses. Eventually her financial affairs are improved and brought into good condition.

1876. William R. Miller elected Governor. Serves from January, 1877, to January, 1879.

1876. The Little Rock and Fort Smith Railroad completed to Cherokee, opposite Fort Smith.

1876. Rutherford B. Hayes, President. The electoral vote of Arkansas is given for Samuel J. Tilden, his opponent.

1878. William R. Miller elected Governor a second time. He serves from January, 1879, to January, 1881.

1880. Thomas J. Churchill elected Governor. The Fishback Amendment, voted on by the people, is defeated.

1880. James A. Garfield is elected President. The vote of Arkansas is cast for W. S. Hancock, his opponent.

1881, July. Chester A. Arthur, President of the United States.

1881-1882. The railroad from Little Rock to Pine Bluff is completed, making a continuous line from Fort Smith to Monticello.

1881-1882. The St. Louis, Arkansas and Texas Railroad is built across the State, from the Missouri line, southwestward, to Texas.

1882. James H. Berry elected Governor. His term is from January, 1883, to 1885.

1883. Cleburne County created. Last county created in Arkansas. Seventy-fifth county now in existence. Seventy-sixth county created.

1884. Grover Cleveland is elected President. The electoral vote of Arkansas is among those cast for him.

1884. Simon P. Hughes elected Governor for a term from January, 1885, to January, 1887. The Fishback Amendment, being a second time submitted to the vote of the people, is adopted. By it the principal and interest of the Holford and Railroad Aid Bonds are prohibited from being paid.

1884. Death of E. H. English, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court. Sterling R. Cockrill, his successor.

1885. Augustus H. Garland appointed Attorney-General of the United States in the Cabinet of President Cleveland. First person from Arkansas to hold a Cabinet position.



1886. Simon P. Hughes elected Governor a second time.

1888. James P. Eagle elected Governor. He is inaugurated January 17th, 1889, for a term ending January, 1891.

1888, November. Benjamin Harrison elected President. The vote of Arkansas is given for Grover Cleveland, his opponent.

### *REVIEW.*

The foregoing LIST OF GOVERNORS and SUMMARY OF EVENTS will be found serviceable as a GENERAL REVIEW.

## APPENDIX C.

## AGGREGATE POPULATION OF THE STATE AND BY COUNTIES AT DIFFERENT PERIODS.

COUNTIES.	1790.	1810.	1820.	1830.	1840.	1850.	1860.	1870.	1880.	1880. White.	1880. Colored.
The State.	308	*1,602	14,255	30,388	67,574	200,847	435,150	481,471	802,525	501,531	210,666
Arkansas.	1,002	1,002	1,200	1,420	1,340	3,245	8,854	8,208	8,008	4,071	3,067
Ashley.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	2,058	8,590	8,042	10,150	5,020	5,130
Baxter.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	6,004	5,050	45
Benton.	.....	.....	.....	.....	2,228	3,710	9,300	13,531	20,328	20,407	128
Boone.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	7,032	12,140	12,055	88
Bradley.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	3,529	8,388	8,046	6,285	4,075	2,210
Calhoun.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	3,553	5,071	3,883	69
Carroll.	.....	.....	.....	.....	2,844	4,014	9,833	5,700	13,337	13,272	60
Chicot.	.....	.....	.....	1,105	3,800	5,115	9,231	7,214	10,417	1,803	8,405
Clark.	.....	.....	1,040	1,399	2,309	4,070	9,735	11,953	15,771	16,807	5,003
Clay.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	7,213	7,213	7,101	22
Columbia.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	12,449	11,397	14,000	8,587	5,503
Conway.	.....	.....	.....	982	2,892	3,583	6,007	8,112	12,755	9,540	3,200
Craighead.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	3,006	4,877	7,037	6,776	261
Crawford.	.....	.....	.....	2,440	4,260	7,000	7,850	8,057	14,710	13,332	1,392
Crittenden.	.....	.....	.....	1,272	1,501	2,045	4,020	3,331	6,415	1,800	7,516
Cross.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	3,015	5,050	3,201	1,789
Dallas.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	6,877	8,283	5,797	6,805	4,200	2,006
Desha.	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,558	2,911	6,459	6,125	8,973	2,452	6,514
Dorsey.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	8,370	6,041	2,329
Drew.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	3,276	9,078	9,600	12,231	6,172	5,759
Faulkner.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	12,780	11,308	1,418
Franklin.	.....	.....	.....	.....	2,605	3,072	7,208	6,627	14,051	14,155	403
Fulton.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,819	4,024	4,843	6,720	6,081	36
Garland.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	6,023	7,457	1,561
Grant.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	6,185	5,029	586
Greene.	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,886	2,503	5,813	3,043	7,480	7,405	75
Hempstead.	.....	.....	.....	2,512	4,021	7,072	13,080	13,708	10,015	6,503	9,421
Hot Spring.	.....	.....	.....	458	1,097	3,000	5,635	5,877	7,775	7,030	745
Howard.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	6,017	7,400	2,508
Independence.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	14,506	16,703	1,382
Izard.	.....	.....	.....	2,031	3,600	7,707	14,407	14,506	18,086	10,857	2,222
Jackson.	.....	.....	.....	1,406	2,210	3,213	7,215	6,866	10,857	10,035	1,382
Jackson.	.....	.....	.....	333	1,510	3,686	10,403	7,208	10,877	8,413	2,763
Jefferson.	.....	.....	.....	772	2,566	5,834	14,071	15,733	22,386	5,331	17,011

Johnson	3,433	5,227	7,612	9,152	11,505	11,073	491
Lafayette	2,400	5,227	8,464	9,139	5,730	2,110	3,614
Lawrence	2,835	5,274	9,372	5,951	8,752	8,315	407
Lee	715	2,806	.....	.....	13,258	4,138	9,150
Lincoln	.....	.....	.....	.....	9,255	4,212	5,040
Little River	.....	.....	.....	3,230	6,104	3,604	3,335
Logan	.....	.....	.....	.....	14,885	13,691	984
Louise	2,775	4,833	7,710	8,231	12,416	11,413	4,003
Madison	1,325	2,368	6,192	3,979	11,455	11,331	124
Marion	.....	.....	.....	.....	7,607	7,804	43
Miller	350	.....	.....	3,633	9,619	5,324	4,595
Mississippi	.....	2,368	3,895	8,633	7,332	4,671	2,754
Monroe	401	2,049	5,657	8,330	9,574	4,365	5,200
Montgomery	.....	1,958	3,633	2,954	5,729	5,171	258
Nevada	.....	.....	.....	.....	12,659	9,230	3,722
Newton	.....	1,758	3,393	4,374	6,120	6,115	5
Quachita	.....	9,801	12,030	12,075	11,758	5,504	6,253
Perry	.....	928	2,405	2,685	3,572	3,072	800
Phillips	1,152	6,055	14,877	15,372	21,202	5,414	15,809
Pike	.....	1,301	4,025	3,788	6,345	5,954	302
Poinsett	.....	1,320	3,621	1,720	2,192	1,002	260
Polk	.....	1,263	4,202	3,379	5,557	5,792	61
Pope	1,153	4,710	7,853	8,380	14,322	13,413	909
Prairie	.....	2,007	7,854	5,004	8,435	5,094	2,734
Pulaski	2,395	5,657	11,000	32,000	32,010	17,007	14,921
Randolph	.....	3,275	8,672	6,714	11,724	11,007	627
St. Francis	1,505	4,479	8,672	8,380	8,380	4,021	3,497
Saltine	.....	3,903	6,540	3,911	8,953	7,856	1,360
Scott	1,694	3,083	5,415	7,453	9,671	9,605	83
Searcy	936	1,979	5,271	5,614	7,202	7,202	16
Sebastian	.....	.....	9,238	12,910	19,500	17,070	1,541
Sevier	631	4,240	10,516	4,102	5,088	5,088	1,000
Sharp	.....	.....	.....	5,400	9,047	8,871	176
Stone	.....	.....	.....	.....	4,089	4,084	99
Union	940	10,208	12,288	10,571	13,410	6,085	6,431
Van Buren	.....	2,864	5,357	5,107	9,505	9,417	118
Washington	2,182	9,070	14,673	17,200	23,804	22,804	911
White	.....	2,619	8,310	10,317	17,704	15,704	2,032
Woodruff	.....	929	6,981	6,981	8,640	4,103	4,433
Yell	.....	3,341	6,333	8,048	13,852	12,733	1,118

The above table is inserted for reference.

\*Returned as follows:

Settlements of Hopefield and St. Francis—White, 159; slave, 20; total

Settlements on the Arkansas—White, 705; free colored, 2; slave, 107; total

..... 188

..... 874

1002

TABLE SHOWING GAINS IN POPULATION AT VARIOUS DATES.

Population in Census 1785.....	196		
“ “ 1799 .....	368	Gain of.....	172
“ “ 1810 .....	1,062	“ .....	694
“ “ 1820 .....	14,255	“ .....	13,193
“ “ 1830.....	30,388	“ .....	16,133
“ “ 1840 .....	97,574	“ .....	67,186
“ “ 1850.....	209,897	“ .....	112,323
“ “ 1860 .....	435,450	“ .....	225,553
“ “ 1870.....	484,471	“ .....	49,021
“ “ 1880 .....	802,525	“ .....	318,054

## APPENDIX D.

---

### THE CIVIL GOVERNMENT OF THE COUNTRY.

#### *IN THE NATION.*

1. The people of Arkansas, as well as all other citizens of the United States, live under a double government—that is, a government by State officers and by national officers, at one and the same time. They are under two kinds of laws; those made by the Nation and those made by the State. There are some subjects over which the Government of the United States, which is called the Federal Government, alone has the power to make laws; as for instance, in all postal matters, the carrying and delivery of the mail, the establishment and government of postoffices, and the manufacture of the Nation's money at its mints, or the issue of National Bank bills, etc., and it alone can make laws for the punishment of offenses committed in these matters; as for instance, in robbing the mail, in making or passing counterfeit money, and the like.

2. On the other hand, the States alone have the power to pass laws regulating their own internal affairs, so far as they do not conflict with the Constitution and laws of the United States; but within these limits the States are sovereign and cannot be interfered with by the Federal Government.

---

THE NATION. 1.—Under what kinds of laws are the people of Arkansas and all other citizens of the United States? Over what subjects may the Federal Government alone make laws?

2.—Over what subjects may the States alone make laws?

3. Each State has the exclusive right to punish crimes and offenses against its own laws committed within the limits of its own territory, such as theft, assaults, etc.; but even inside of the limits of a State, the Federal tribunals may take cognizance of such cases in the following instances—to-wit: As a matter of courtesy to the General Government each State cedes to that Government jurisdiction over all arsenals, forts, navy-yards, mints, dock-yards and customhouses within their several limits; and if a theft, assault, or other offense, which would ordinarily be cognizable by the State laws alone, should be committed within the limits of any arsenal, fort, navy-yard, mint, dock-yard or custom-house, it would be cognizable by the Federal tribunals, and not by those of the State.

4. The United States, as a Nation, is governed by a written CONSTITUTION, which is the highest law of the land. It was adopted at Philadelphia in 1786 by the thirteen original colonies, and went into operation on the first Wednesday in March, 1789, and as the several States have subsequently come into the Union as States, they have, in doing so, adopted this Constitution for their government. All public officers being sworn into office are sworn to support this Constitution. This Constitution can only be amended by the proposed amendment being passed by two-thirds of both houses of Congress, or by a general convention of the people for proposing amendments, called by Congress on the application of the Legislatures of two-thirds of the several States, and then submitted to the people; when, if it be ratified by the Legislatures of three-fourths of the several States, or by conventions of three-fourths thereof, according as the one or the other mode of ratification shall be proposed

---

3.—In what instances may the Federal laws punish offenses committed within the limits of a State?

4.—By what written instrument is the Government of the United States regulated? Is this the highest law of the land? When was it adopted?

by Congress, the proposed amendment shall then become a part of the Constitution. In one or other of these methods the Constitution of the United States has been amended fifteen times, or by fifteen articles, but ten of them were adopted at once, out of twelve which were proposed by the Congress of 1789; the other five being adopted at other times; being six instances in which the instrument has been amended since its original adoption.

5. The Government of the United States is divided into three DEPARTMENTS or branches—to-wit: the EXECUTIVE, which comprehends also the Administrative; the LEGISLATIVE, and the JUDICIAL. The chief executive officer is the PRESIDENT. He is elected, not by the direct votes of the people, but by electors. This system, called the Electoral College, was originally devised by Alexander Hamilton, an eminent statesman of New York, and is as follows: On Tuesday following the first Monday in November, in those years in which a President is to be voted for, each State chooses, in such manner as the Legislature may direct, a number of electors equal to the whole number of Senators and Representatives to which the State is entitled in Congress, which electors shall meet in their respective States and cast their ballots for President and Vice-President, one of which officers is required not to be of the same State with themselves, and the person who receives the highest number of the votes of these electors for President in all the States, is chosen President; and the person who receives the highest number of such votes for Vice-President is so chosen. In Arkansas the electors are chosen by the votes of the people, given at the polls on the Tuesday following the first Monday in November, in the year in which they are to be chosen.

---

How may it be amended? How often has it been amended?

5.—Into what departments is the Government of the United States divided? Who is the chief executive officer? How is he elected? Explain the system of the Electoral College.

6. The term of office of the President is four years. It is necessary that he be a native-born citizen of the United States, of the age of thirty-five years, and fourteen years a resident of the United States. If the President dies or resigns or becomes disabled, the Vice-President becomes President; and if the Vice-President, while serving as President, dies, the Secretary of State becomes President; then the Secretary of the Treasury, then the Secretary of War, then the Attorney-General, then the Postmaster-General, then the Secretary of the Navy, and lastly, the Secretary of the Interior.

The President has power to appoint, "by and with the advice and consent of Congress," his Cabinet, consisting of eight officers; all Ambassadors, Ministers to foreign Courts, Consuls, Judges of the United States Supreme Court, the United States Circuit and District Courts, Revenue Collectors and Revenue officers, District Attorneys, Marshals and Postmasters. Except the Judges aforesaid, who hold for life, these appointees hold their offices for four years, or until their successors are elected and qualified. The President is inaugurated on the 4th day of March, in the year succeeding that in which the vote for electors is had. It is the duty of the Vice-President to preside over the Senate as its presiding officer. He is the first in the line of succession on the death of the President.

7. The President's Cabinet consists of eight officers—to-wit: a Secretary of State, Secretary of the Treasury, Secretary of War, an Attorney-General, a Postmaster-General, Secretary of the Navy, Secretary of the Interior, and Secretary of Agriculture. The latter office was created February 9th 1889. The duties of

---

6.—What is the length of the President's term of office? What are the qualifications for the office? State what is the Presidential succession. What appointing power has the President? When is the President inaugurated? What are the duties of the Vice-President?

7.—Of whom does the President's Cabinet consist, and what are their duties?



the Secretary of State pertain to the relations of the Government with other Governments, and to internal civil affairs. The Secretary of the Treasury is the financial officer of the Government and governs its money matters. The duties of Secretary of War relate to the army and the military affairs of the nation; those of the Secretary of the Navy, to its ships and marine; those of the Secretary of the Interior, to its public lands, and the relation of the Government with Indian tribes. The Postmaster-General governs the postal matters, the letting of contracts for carrying the mails, the establishment of postal routes, etc., and the Attorney-General is the law officer of the Government. The Secretary of Agriculture has supervision of the agricultural interests of the country. Each of these chiefs of departments have subordinate and lesser departments under them, which are governed and administered by assistants.

8. The **LEGISLATIVE BRANCH** of the Government consists of the Congress, which is composed of the Senate and House of Representatives. The Senate consists of two Senators from each State. No matter how small the State, it has two Senators, and if never so large it has only two. These Senators are chosen by the Legislatures of the several States, and serve for a term of six years. The Representatives are chosen by the direct vote of the people, and serve for two years. The number of Representatives is apportioned among the several States according to population. Each State makes such districts for the election of Congressmen as it sees fit, having regard for the requisite number of population. In Arkansas there are five Congressional Districts, and five Representatives in Congress. These districts are changed from time to time, as it becomes necessary to make new ones. Each Territory of the United States is allowed one Representative in Congress, but has

---

8.—Of whom does the Legislative branch consist? How are the Senators chosen? How the Representatives? How many Senators are there to each State? How are the Representatives apportioned?

no Representative in the Senate. The Legislative branch of the Government is the department which makes laws for the governing of the country

9. The JUDICIAL BRANCH of the Government consists of the Supreme Court of the United States, and the Subordinate Federal Courts, located in the several States. The judges of these courts are appointed by the President, confirmed by Congress, and hold their offices for life, or during good behavior, and can only be removed on impeachment by the Senate, sitting as a court of impeachment. A judge of either of these courts who has reached the age of seventy years, and has served on the bench for ten years, is entitled to retire on full pay for the remainder of his life. The Supreme Court consists of nine members, a Chief Justice and eight Associate Justices. Its sessions are held in the city of Washington, but each member of the court is required to do circuit duty, certain States made into a circuit being apportioned to each one, in which they hold court at stated periods, in conjunction with the District Judges in the several States. The Supreme Court has only appellate jurisdiction—that is, can only act on cases which are appealed to it from the lower courts, except in cases where ambassadors and public ministers are concerned, or where a State is a party, in which instances they have original jurisdiction. No case can be appealed to the Supreme Court unless the amount in controversy is as much as \$5000, or involves a question of the constitutionality of some law of Congress.

10. Next below the Judges of the Supreme Court are the Circuit Judges. A certain number of States, as may be directed by

---

9.—Of what does the Judicial branch consist? How long do the judges hold office? How are they appointed? How can they be removed? Of how many members does the Supreme Court of the United States consist? What circuit duty are they required to do? What jurisdiction has the Supreme Court of the United States?

10.—What judges are next below the judges of the Supreme Court?

Congress, are formed into a circuit, in which a judge, called a Circuit Judge, goes from State to State, and holds court in conjunction with the resident District Judge. The District Judge holds court at such times and places as Congress may direct, either in an entire State, or in such portions of it as may be laid off into districts. In Arkansas there are two districts, the Eastern and Western Districts. In the Eastern District court is held at Little Rock, Helena, and Texarkana, and in the Western District, at Fort Smith. No suit can be brought in the United States Court unless it is between citizens of different States, and unless the amount in controversy is as much as \$2000. Prior to the year 1889 the District Court only was held at Helena and Texarkana, in the Eastern District of Arkansas, and at Fort Smith, in the Western District, but in January, 1889, a law was passed by Congress, by which Circuit Courts were directed to be also held at Helena and Texarkana, in the Eastern District, and at Fort Smith, in the Western District of Arkansas

II. The other officers of the Federal or United States Court are the Clerk, District Attorney, Marshal, Crier, and Commissioners. The Clerk keeps the records, enters judgments, issues writs, etc. He is appointed by the Circuit and District Judges, and holds his office for life, or during good behavior. The District Attorney is the law officer of the court, and it is his duty to see to all matters where the interests of the Government are involved, and to prosecute offenders. He is appointed by the President, and his term is four years. The Marshal is similar to the sheriff in State Courts. He serves warrants and makes arrests. He is appointed by the President for four years. The Crier proclaims the opening and closing of the court, and makes proclamation of forfeitures or condemnations in admiralty proceedings. He is appointed by the

---

With whom do they hold court? How many districts are there in Arkansas? What jurisdiction has the United States Court?

11.—What are the officers of the court and what are their duties?

District Judge, and holds office during the pleasure of the court. The Commissioners are similar to the Justices of the Peace sitting as committing magistrates. They are appointed by the District Judge, and hold office during the pleasure of the court. They are empowered to issue warrants for the arrest of offenders against the laws of the United States; to summon witnesses, and if probable cause appears for detaining the accused, they may require him to give bail for his appearance before the Court or before the Grand Jury; and in default of bail, may commit the prisoner to custody, or may discharge him at the hearing, if there be no ground for thinking him guilty of the offense charged.

### *IN THE STATE.*

1. The Governments of the various States of the Federal Union are modelled after that of the National Government, but they have different officers, and the several States have officers different from each other. Each State is governed by a written CONSTITUTION, which can be amended, or can be done away with, and a new Constitution adopted, as often as the people; who are sovereign, may choose; but every Constitution that is adopted must be such an one as will give to the State a Republican form of Government, with officers elected by the people. In ARKANSAS the Constitution may be amended by the amendment being adopted by the Legislature and voted on by the people; when, if a majority of the votes of the people be for its adoption, the amendment becomes a part of the Constitution. A new Constitution may be adopted by the Legislature calling a convention of the people for the purpose; the convention adopts a Constitution of such form as they may think best, which is then submitted to a vote of the people, and if a majority of the votes cast be for its adoption, it then

---

IN THE STATE. 1.—How is each State of the Federal Union governed? How may the Constitution of Arkansas be amended? How may a new

becomes the law of the land, and the previous Constitution is set aside. Or the Legislature may submit to a vote of the people the question whether a convention, for the purpose of framing a new Constitution, shall be called, and if a majority of the votes cast be for calling such a convention, then the convention is called and the subject of forming a new Constitution is considered by them; but otherwise, not. When a new Constitution is adopted the terms of all State officers holding under the old one come to an end, and new officers must be elected to serve under the new law. The present Constitution of Arkansas was adopted in 1874, and has been amended once since that time. At the general election in 1884 an amendment called Amendment No. 1, or commonly known as the Fishback Amendment, was adopted, whereby the payment of the Holford bonds, and the Railroad Aid bonds, issued by the State, is prohibited.

2. The officers of Arkansas, like those of the National Government, are divided into three branches or DEPARTMENTS—to-wit: the EXECUTIVE, which also comprehends the Administrative; the LEGISLATIVE, and the JUDICIAL. These three branches are of the same grade or dignity with each other, and are called co-ordinate branches, because neither one is above the other, but all three are equal. The Legislative department makes the laws, the Judicial branch construes them, and the Executive branch executes them.

3. The EXECUTIVE OFFICERS of the State of Arkansas, provided for by the State Constitution, consist of a Governor, Secretary of State, Treasurer of State, Auditor of State, and Attorney-General, besides which there are other officers created by the State laws—

---

Constitution he had? When was the present Constitution of the State of Arkansas adopted? In what particular has it been amended?

2.—Of what branches or departments do the State officers consist? What are the duties of each?

3.—Of whom do the executive officers of Arkansas consist? How chosen and how long do they hold their offices?

to-wit: A Commissioner of State lands and a Superintendent of Public Instruction. These officers are elected by the direct vote of the people given at the polls, and hold their offices for two years. There is also a State Geologist, who is a public officer, appointed by the Governor, and a number of State Boards created by law for various purposes—to-wit: Board of Election Canvassers, Board of Commissioners of the Common School Fund, the State Debt Board, Board of Penitentiary Commissioners, Printing Board, Board of Railroad Commissioners, Board of Municipal Corporations, Board of Education, Board of Review for Donation Contests, and Board of Examiners of State Scrip. The various State educational institutions are also governed by boards of trustees, or of directors, created by law—to-wit: the Arkansas Medical College, the Arkansas State University, the Pine Bluff Normal College, the State Lunatic Asylum, the Deaf Mute Institute, and the Arkansas School for the Blind. A State Board of Health is also provided by law to take necessary measures for the public health, to prevent the spread of epidemics and infectious diseases, and for the purpose of public sanitation. A Board of Dental Surgery is also provided for that particular class of subjects.

4. The GOVERNOR of the State is the chief executive. He has the power to appoint officers, to grant pardons, to remit fines, to issue certificates of election and to do many other acts of an executive nature. He is commander-in-chief of the militia, and is ex-officio member of the Boards of Election Canvassers, School Fund, State debt, Penitentiary, Printing, Railroads, Corporations, Education, Donation Contests, and State Scrip. He must be thirty years of age and seven years a resident of the State. He has for his assistance a Private Secretary, who attends to the clerical mat-

---

4.—Who is the chief executive of the State? What are his duties? What are the qualifications of the office? What is the succession after the Governor?

ters of his office, and he also appoints an Adjutant-General, whose duty is to attend to the militia matters of the State, superintend the public arms, etc. If the Governor dies, resigns, or is removed, or becomes disabled, the President of the Senate becomes Governor, and if the President of the Senate dies, resigns, is removed, or becomes disabled while serving as Governor, the Speaker of the House becomes Governor.

5. The SECRETARY OF STATE keeps the State archives and records, issues commissions to officers elected and attends generally to the clerical portion of the public service. The TREASURER is the financial officer of the State, having in charge its funds, and receiving and disbursing its revenues. The AUDITOR attends to the making of contracts with relation to public affairs. The ATTORNEY-GENERAL is the law officer of the State, whose duty it is to attend to all matters before the Supreme Court or other tribunals in which the interests of the State are involved. The State GEOLOGIST is an officer created by law to explore the State, and ascertain and make reports as to its minerals, etc.

The COMMISSIONER OF STATE LANDS is an officer whose duty it is to manage the landed interests of the State; to receive and list all lands forfeited to the State for taxes; and in whose office public lands are bought, entered or located.

THE BOARD OF ELECTION CANVASSERS consists of the Governor and the Secretary of State, and is charged with the duty of canvassing the vote at elections for State officers. The BOARD OF COMMISSIONERS OF THE COMMON SCHOOL FUND consists of the Governor, the Secretary of State, and the Superintendent of Public Instruction, and their duty is to govern and distribute the common-school fund provided for educational purposes. The

---

5.—What are the duties of the Secretary of State? The Treasurer? Auditor? Attorney-General? State Geologist? Commissioners of State Lands? Board of Election Canvassers? Board of Commissioners of the Common School Fund? State Debt Board? Board of Penitentiary Com-

STATE DEBT BOARD consists of the Governor, the Auditor, and the Secretary of State, and their duty is to consider matters pertaining to the public debt. The BOARD OF PENITENTIARY COMMISSIONERS consists of the Governor, the Attorney-General, and the Secretary of State, and it is their duty to superintend the management of the State Penitentiary and the employment of convicts or prisoners thereof. The PRINTING BOARD consists of the Governor, the Auditor, and the Treasurer of the State, and it is their duty to let and make contracts for the printing of the public reports and other documents of the State. The BOARD OF RAILROAD COMMISSIONERS consists of the Governor, as President of the Board; the Secretary of State, as clerk, and the Auditor of State. It is their duty to assess and equalize the valuation of railroad property in the State for the purposes of taxation

The BOARD OF MUNICIPAL CORPORATIONS consists of the Secretary of State and the Auditor, and considers matters pertaining to the incorporation of cities and towns. The BOARD OF EDUCATION consists of the Governor, the Secretary of State, and the Superintendent of Public Instruction, and takes cognizance of public matters relating to education and the public school system.

The BOARD OF REVIEW FOR DONATION CONTESTS consists of the Governor, the Auditor, and the Attorney-General, and their duty is to consider matters arising under conflicting locations of lands by donation, in the State land office. The BOARD OF EXAMINERS OF STATE SCRIP consists of the Governor, the Secretary of State, and the Auditor, and their function is to see to the issue, calling in, and cancellation of the State's paper, called scrip. The various Boards of Trustees, or Directors, for the several educational institutions of the State, are

---

missioners? Printing Board? Board of Railroad Commissioners? Board of Municipal Corporations? Board of Education? Board of Review for Donation Contests? Board of Examiners of State Scrip?



appointed from time to time, their duties being to govern and direct the interests of the institutions over which they are placed.

6. The STATE SUPERINTENDENT OF PUBLIC INSTRUCTION is the head of the educational system of the State. He receives the reports of the County Examiners, superintends the holding of teachers' institutes, and all other matters pertaining to common schools. In each county there is an officer appointed, called the County Examiner, whose duty is to examine all applicants for positions as teachers in the public schools, and to grant certificates to those who show themselves to be qualified for the position. Each county is divided into such school districts as may be appropriate, and in each such district, school directors are chosen by the vote of the people to manage the public school affairs. The public schools are kept up by a tax, voted by each district and collected by the sheriff, like any other taxes paid into the State Treasury, and from there is distributed by the Superintendent of Public Instruction to the various counties, at so much per capita, determined by the number of the school population in the county. The School Directors constitute a Board for the management of the school affairs in the district, and in cities of the first class they have authority to elect a superintendent of schools. It is they who attend to the building and furnishing of school houses, the employment of teachers, and the general management of the school interests.

7. THE LEGISLATIVE DEPARTMENT of the State consists of the Senate and House of Representatives of the General Assembly. Two or more counties are joined in a Senatorial District, as the Legislature may direct, in which one or more Senators are chosen

---

6.—The duties of the State Superintendent of Public Instruction? What are County Examiners and what are their duties? How are the public schools kept up? What are the duties and powers of school directors?

7.—Of what does the Legislative department consist? How many Senators are there? How chosen, and for how long do they hold their

by the vote of the people, according to population. They hold their offices for four years. The Senate is required to consist of not less than thirty, nor more than thirty-five members.

The House of Representatives is composed of representatives, elected by the vote of the people, one or more from each county, or from such counties as may be joined for the purpose. They hold their offices for two years. The House of Representatives is required to consist of not less than seventy-three, nor more than one hundred members.

These two bodies or branches form the General Assembly or Legislature, which enacts laws for the government of the State. To become a law a matter must be passed by a majority of both Houses, and be approved and signed by the Governor; or if the Governor vetoes the measure, the two Houses may, by the vote of a majority of the members elected to the General Assembly, pass it over his veto, and it then becomes a law. If any bill is passed by the Legislature and is presented to the Governor for his approval, and he fails to return it to the Legislature within five days (Sundays excepted), it then becomes a law, unless the General Assembly, by adjourning, shall have prevented its returns, in which case it shall become a law, unless he shall file the same, with his objections, in the office of the Secretary of State and give notice thereof by public proclamation, within twenty days after such adjournment.

8. THE JUDICIAL DEPARTMENT of the State Government consists of the Supreme Court, the Circuit Courts, the Chancery Courts, Courts of Common Pleas, County and Probate Courts, Courts of Justices of the Peace, and City or Corporation Courts. The judges for all of these courts are elected by the votes of the

---

offices? Of whom does the House of Representatives consist? How elected, and for how long do they hold their offices? What are the requirements for the enactment of a law?

8.—Of what does the Judicial department of the State consist? Of how

people given at the polls. The SUPREME COURT consists of five judges, one of whom is called the Chief Justice, and the other four Associate Justices. They hold their offices for eight years. A judge of the Supreme Court is required to be at least thirty years of age, of good moral character, learned in the law, a citizen of the United States, and two years a resident of the State. He is required to have practiced law for eight years, or to have been on the bench of any court of record for a time which, added to the time that he has practiced, shall equal eight years. The sessions of the court are held only at the Capital. The judges of the Supreme Court have power to appoint a Clerk of the court, who holds his office for six years, but is subject to removal for good cause. It is the duty of the Clerk to keep the records, enter judgments, issue writs, transcribe opinions, and the like.

The judges of the Supreme Court also have power to appoint a Reporter of the court, whose business it is to prepare reports of the decisions made by the court and to publish them from time to time.

If a judge of the Supreme Court is disqualified from presiding at the hearing of any case, either by being a party concerned or of kin to parties concerned, or by having been connected with the case as an attorney, by having presided at the trial of it in any inferior court, or in other way, the Governor has power to appoint some disinterested person to serve in the hearing of the case as a special judge.

The Supreme Court has ordinarily only appellate jurisdiction, and can only consider such cases as are appealed to it from the lower courts.

---

many members does the Supreme Court of the State consist? How elected, and how long do they hold their offices? What are the qualifications of the office? How is the clerk of the Supreme Court chosen? What are his duties, and how long does he hold his office? If a judge of the Supreme Court is disqualified, how is his successor provided? What jurisdiction has the Supreme Court? Of what do the Circuit Courts consist, and what are

The CIRCUIT COURTS are courts held in the several counties by a judge resident of some one of the counties which are joined together for the formation of a circuit. The Circuit Judge goes from place to place, holding court, at stated times, in each county of his circuit. The Circuit Courts take cognizance of both civil and criminal matters, and, except where separate courts of chancery are established, they hear and determine chancery matters also. The Legislature has power to create separate courts for the disposition of chancery cases, if, in their judgment, the necessity therefor exists.

The Circuit Court has both an original and an appellate jurisdiction. Suits may be instituted in it in the first instance, or it may hear cases appealed to it from the Courts of Common Pleas, County and Probate Courts, Courts of the Justices of the Peace, City or Corporation Courts.

The judges of the Circuit Courts are elected by the people and hold their offices for four years. A law-officer for the circuit is provided by law, called the Prosecuting Attorney, whose duty it is to prosecute criminals for offenses, and see that crimes are punished. If a judge of the Circuit Court fails to be present by the second day of the term of his court, or is disqualified, the lawyers in attendance may elect a special judge to preside for the term.

Cases in the Circuit Court are usually tried by a jury of twelve men, summoned by the sheriff, out of a number selected for the purpose by commissioners. All male persons above the age of twenty-one years are liable to be summoned to serve on juries, but firemen, lawyers, ministers of the Gospel, and physicians are

---

their duties? What is the jurisdiction of the Circuit Courts? How are the Circuit Judges chosen, and how long do they hold their offices? Who is the law officer of the Circuit Courts, and what are his duties? If a Circuit Judge is disqualified or fails to attend, how is his successor chosen? How are cases in the Circuit Court usually tried? How are juries selected and summoned? Who is liable to serve as a jurymen? Of what does the Grand Jury consist, and what are its duties.

exempt from doing jury duty. Cases in Circuit Courts may also be tried by the Judge alone, sitting as a jury, and cases which mainly involve questions of law are tried in this way. In Chancery Courts cases are tried by the judge alone, who is called the Chancellor. Offenses against the law committed in the county are enquired of by a jury of twenty-four men, called a Grand Jury. If, in their judgment, a particular person has violated the law, they present against him an indictment, and he is thereupon arrested and held for trial.

### *IN THE COUNTY.*

1. The OFFICERS OF A COUNTY are a Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, where such courts are established, a County and Probate Judge, a Circuit Clerk, a County Clerk, a Sheriff, a Treasurer, a Coroner, a Surveyor, and an Assessor. These officers are elected by the people, and hold their offices for the term of two years. The County Courts have power also to employ an attorney to attend to the legal concerns of the county, and there is also a County Examiner, to examine teachers of public schools for license to teach.

The COURTS OF COMMON PLEAS are courts stationary in the counties where created, and having jurisdiction of civil matters only, in cases involving small amounts.

The County Court is presided over by the COUNTY JUDGE, at stated times, and takes cognizance of all matters pertaining to county roads, bridges, paupers, poor-houses, insane persons, election contests for county officers, the allowance of claims against the county, the levying of taxes, and the like.

Ordinarily the County Court is presided over by the County Judge alone, but when the subject of the levy of taxes is to be

---

IN THE COUNTY. 1.—What officers are there in each county? How are they chosen, and how long do they hold their offices? What are Courts of Common Pleas? What is the County Court? By whom presided over?

considered, the several Justices of the Peace throughout the county sit as members of the court, and a majority of the court determines its action.

The County Judge is also PROBATE JUDGE. The Probate Court has jurisdiction in the administration of estates, the allowance of claims against estates, the appointments of guardians and curators, and the probate of wills.

The CIRCUIT CLERK is an officer whose duty it is to keep and transcribe the records and judgments of the Circuit Court, issue writs, etc., and he is also, by virtue of his office, the RECORDER of the county, whose duty it is to enter of record all deed for sale of property, mortgages, deeds of trust, schedules, and the like. This office may be separate and distinct from that of the county clerk, but ordinarily the duties of the two offices are combined in the same person. The COUNTY CLERK keeps the records of the County Court, issues county scrip or warrants, lists lands forfeited for the non-payment of taxes, etc. He is also the clerk of the Probate Court.

The SHERIFF attends upon the Circuit Court and executes its process and decrees. He is charged with the keeping of all prisoners to be tried in that court, before trial or sentence, and with the arrest of violators of the law on process issuing out of the Circuit or County Courts, which latter court he also serves. He is also *ex-officio* collector of taxes. Each person is required to pay taxes on all property owned, real or personal, for the support of the Government, State, county, city, and the public schools.

The COUNTY TREASURER is the financial officer of the county, and keeps and disburses its revenues and funds.

---

The Probate Court? Its functions? What are the duties of the Circuit Clerk? The County Clerk? The Sheriff? The Coroner? The County Surveyor?

The **CORONER** is an officer, whose duty it is, in case of the death of a person in any other than a natural way, to determine the cause of death, and ascertain, if possible, the agency by which it occurred.

The **COUNTY SURVEYOR** is an officer whose duty it is to make surveys of property of individuals, or of the county, as may be required of him.

The **Assessor** is an officer whose duty it is to place a valuation on all property in the county, real and personal, for purposes of taxation.

### ***IN THE TOWNSHIP.***

1. Each County is divided into townships of convenient size, created by the County Court, and in these townships, officers, called **JUSTICES OF THE PEACE**, are elected by the vote of the people, given at the polls, and hold their offices for two years. One Justice of the Peace is elected for each two hundred voters, but each township, however small, has one Justice of the Peace. The courts of the Justices of the Peace have exclusive jurisdiction of all cases not involving more than one hundred dollars in amount, and concurrent jurisdiction with the Circuit Court in matters of contract, where the amount does not exceed three hundred dollars; for the recovery of personal property to the value of three hundred dollars, and for damages to personal property not exceeding one hundred dollars. They have jurisdiction over certain crimes and misdemeanors, and sit as examining courts in the case of graver offenses. They may, on examination, either commit or discharge accused persons; apprehend parties, or require them to give bail for their appearance before the court having jurisdiction thereof, or the Grand Jury; and they may require persons to give bond to keep the peace or for good behavior.

---

**IN THE TOWNSHIP. 1.**—Into what is each county divided? What are the duties of the Justices of the Peace? What is the extent of their jurisdiction? What are the duties of the Constable?

In common with the Governor of the State, Judges of Courts of Record, regularly ordained Ministers of the Gospel or Priests of any religious sect or denomination, Justices of the Peace have authority to solemnize marriages in their respective counties.

The courts of the Justices of the Peace are attended by a CONSTABLE, who is also elected by the votes of the people. He is the executive officer of the court; serves its process; executes its order and judgments; and makes arrests as ordered by it.

### *IN THE CITY AND TOWN.*

1. The chief officer of a city or incorporated town is the Mayor, who is elected by the people. A city or incorporated town is governed by a City Council or Board of Aldermen. The city or town is divided into wards, and in each ward one or more aldermen are elected by the vote of the people, and these aldermen have authority to pass ordinances for the government of the city or town. Cities are divided into cities of the first and second-class. In cities of the first-class a city judge holds court for the punishment of offenses against the ordinances of the city, and against the public peace. In cities of the second-class the Mayor holds such a court. The city officers are a Mayor, City Council, a Clerk, Treasurer, Collector, Chief of Police, City Engineer, Street Commissioner, Chief of Fire Department, and Policemen. The MAYOR is the chief executive officer, and must approve all ordinances. The CLERK keeps the records, transcribes ordinances, etc. The TREASURER is the financial officer, to receive and disburse its revenues and funds. The COLLECTOR collects licenses and fines. The CHIEF OF POLICE is the principal officer of the police and detective force. The CITY ENGINEER is the City Sur-

---

IN THE CITY AND TOWN. 1.—Who is the chief officer of a city or town? Who are the officers of cities, and what are their duties and powers? Of incorporated towns? How are these officers chosen? What is necessary in order to be a qualified voter?



veyor, who is required to furnish proper grades for streets and other improvements when desired; to superintend the building of sewers, drains, and other public matters. The **STREET COMMISSIONER** has charge of the care and improvement of streets, alleys, gutters, etc. The **CHIEF OF THE FIRE DEPARTMENT** has control of the firemen and the direction of the fire engines. The city **POLICEMEN** have authority to arrest, without warrant, any whom they may find violating the law or disturbing the peace. In incorporated towns the officers are a Mayor, Aldermen, Recorder, Treasurer, and Marshal. All of the above officers, below councilmen, are elected by the Council or Aldermen, but the Councilmen or Aldermen, and all above them, are elected by the vote of the people. To be a **QUALIFIED VOTER** it is required that the voter shall be a male person, of the age of twenty-one years, a citizen of the United States, or who has declared his intention of becoming such, who has resided in the State twelve months, in the county six months, and in the voting precinct or ward one month, next preceding the election. Each such person is entitled to vote, except such as have been convicted of the commission of a felony.

## THE MILITARY GOVERNMENT OF THE COUNTRY.

### *IN THE NATION.*

I. The offensive and defensive power of the National Government consists of its **ARMY** and **NAVY**. The former is made up of regular soldiers—that is, such as enlist permanently in its armies, or for a term of years; and volunteers, or those who enlist for a particular occasion, and are mustered out of service as soon as the occasion is past. In times of war, if the regular army, which is also called the standing army, and the volunteer forces, are not

---

**IN THE NATION. 1.**—Of what does the military power of the Nation consist? How may armies be increased?

sufficient, Congress has power to order a draft or conscription, in which the names of all persons subject to military duty are drawn from by lot, and those drawn are required to render military service, or to furnish a substitute to serve for them.

2. The President of the United States is the *ex-officio* COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF of the army and navy of the Nation, and may exercise the powers thereof; but the active administration of affairs is conducted by a Secretary of War and general officers, through their subordinates, down to the enlisted men, who are required to obey strictly the orders of their superiors. Except in times of conscription the army of the Nation is kept up by voluntary enlistments. The term of an enlisted man is five years, during which time he receives a monthly pay, with rations and clothing. If, at the end of his term of enlistment, he sees fit to re-enlist, he receives certain advancements. Congress alone has power to declare war, but the President may call out the army, or call for volunteers, to suppress insurrection, repel invasion, or preserve the peace. The President is also authorized to employ the land and naval forces of the Government, to assist in executing the laws, or preserving the public peace, when called upon so to do by the Governor or by the Legislature of any State.

3. The NAVAL AFFAIRS of the Government of the United States are administered by a Secretary of the Navy, with subordinate commodores and other commanding officers, down to the marines or sailors of the Government's service, making use of such ships and war vessels as the Government provides; but the President has power also to issue what are called "letters of marque (*mark*) and reprisal," which authorize private persons to use

---

2.—Who is the Commander-in-Chief of the National army and navy? How are the affairs of the army actively administered? In what manner are the National armies kept up?

3.—How are the naval affairs of the United States Government administered? Explain what is meant by "letters of marque" and privateering.

their own ships against an enemy, or to destroy the commerce of an enemy, in which case they are called privateers. The taking of letters of marque for service on the sea is the same as volunteering would be on the land; but the larger Governments of the world are so well supplied with ships of their own, as not to need the service of privateersmen.

### *IN THE STATE.*

1. The military power of the State consists of its MILITIA. All able-bodied male persons, residents of the State of Arkansas, between the ages of eighteen and forty-five, except such as may be exempted by law, are liable to militia duty. The Governor of the State is the Commander-in-Chief of the military forces of the State, and when the General Assembly is not in session, he may call out the militia or volunteers, or both, to execute the laws, repel invasion, repress insurrection, and preserve the public peace. He may declare martial law to exist, and when such is done, the military power is placed above that of the civil power, which is, for the time being, superseded. The military affairs of the State of Arkansas are administered by the Governor, through an Adjutant-General, and such General and other commanding officers, down to the militiamen, as are in the State's service, in the same manner as done in the case of the military power of the United States.

---

IN THE STATE. 1.—Of what does the military power of the State of Arkansas consist? Who are liable to militia duty? Who is the Commander-in-Chief of the State military forces? What are his powers? How are the military affairs of the State of Arkansas administered?



# INDEX.

	PAGE.
Abbadie, de.....	32, 182, 186, 187
Abolition Party.....	105, 116
Acquisition.....	7
Adams, Samuel.....	114, 184, 194
Adjutant General.....	229
Admission into the Union.....	91, 92, 93, 193
Amendment, Fishback.....	103, 107, 215
Fourteenth.....	152, 202
Fifteenth.....	152, 202
to National Constitution.....	208
American Party.....	105
Anti-Federalist Party.....	104
Anti-Slavery Party.....	123, 134
Archer, S. B.....	62
Area.....	8
Arkadelphia.....	58
Arkansa Indians.....	11
Arkansas; Early Spelling of Name.....	12
Pronunciation of Name.....	12, 13
Meaning of Word.....	13
Territory.....	58, 100
City.....	108
County.....	51, 54, 60, 68, 81, 107, 154, 189
Post.....	52, 100, 144, 187, 189; Capture of
River, Exploration of.....	47, 187
Command of.....	34
Arkansaw; District of.....	47, 189
Arkopolis.....	56
Arsenals.....	111
Arthur, Chester A.....	168, 202
Ashley, Chester.....	50, 116, 110, 121
County.....	121, 195, 160
Assessor.....	225
Assignment of Bank.....	102
Attorney General.....	217
Aubry.....	32, 182, 187
Auditor.....	217
Augusta.....	83, 142, 143
Austin, Moses.....	55, 57
Stephen F.....	56, 57, 62, 117
Bank, Real Estate.....	101, 103, 104
State.....	99, 100, 103
Barkman, Jacob.....	57
Barraque, Antoine.....	68, 81
Bastrop, Baron de; Grant to.....	33
Bates, Frederick.....	47, 49, 63, 184, 100
James Woodson.....	62, 63, 67, 101
Batesville.....	67, 100
Battle, B. B.....	58
Baxter, Elisha.....	156, 158, 161, 185, 200, 201
Bonds.....	164
County.....	158, 200

	PAGE.
Beebe, Roswell.....	56, 125
Belding Claim.....	179
Benton.....	51
County.....	99, 103
Bentonville.....	99
Berry, James H.....	103, 108, 109, 179, 185, 209
Berryville.....	87, 170
Bertrand, Charles P.....	92
Bettis' Bluff.....	90
Bienville.....	27, 29, 182, 186
Biscoeville.....	57
Bloomington.....	88
Bluff, Bettis'.....	90
Fabre's.....	80
Board, Military.....	139
Boards, State.....	216
Boisbriant.....	31, 182
Bolivar.....	107
Bonaparte.....	34, 37, 38, 39, 40
Bonds, Holford.....	101, 103, 107, 104
Boone County.....	153, 200
Daniel.....	153
Border War.....	130
Borland, Solon.....	105, 110, 120, 122, 127
Boundary.....	59, 67, 70, 84, 108, 191, 192, 193, 104
Boysville.....	188
Bradley County.....	110, 116, 121, 154, 160, 194, 160
Breckenridge, C. R.....	179
John C.....	120
Bridge.....	200
Brooks, Joseph.....	106, 156, 161, 200
Brooks and Baxter War.....	101, 200
Brown, Jacob.....	100, 110
Joseph C.....	67, 101
Brownsville.....	121
Bryan, James.....	56
Buchanan, James.....	128, 195
Buena Vista, Battle of.....	110, 120, 195
Byrd, Richard C.....	122, 123, 184, 185
Cabinet.....	162, 210
Cache River, Skirmish at.....	144
Cadillac.....	20, 182
Cadron, The.....	55, 62
Cairo and Fulton Railroad.....	125, 154, 195
Caldwell, Henry C.....	147, 178, 198
Calhoun County.....	124, 195
Camden.....	112
Cane Creek Church.....	154
Capital, Territorial.....	55, 65, 101
State.....	55, 101
Capitol.....	78
Cappa.....	11

	PAGE.		PAGE.
Carnahan, John P.	52	Counties, Government of	223
Carondelet, Baron de	33, 34, 52, 68, 183, 185	County Judge	223
Settlement	35	Courts	212, 213, 220, 221
Carroll County	86, 113, 153, 193	Officers of	213, 223
Carrollton	86	Craighead County	128, 196, 199, 200
Casa Calvo, Sebastian de	33, 183, 188	Thomas B.	128
Cass, Lewis	128, 195	Crawford County	66, 79, 88, 107, 125, 191
Cauthron	88	Crittenden County	70, 86, 192, 196, 199, 200
Census	34, 65, 84, 111, 124, 129, 153, 166, 204	Robert	56, 60, 61, 62, 65, 68, 69, 70, 71, 77, 105, 179, 184, 190, 191, 192
Center Point	160	Cross County	141, 142, 197
Cession to Spain	31, 184, 187	Edward	58, 142
to France	34, 183, 188	Crozat	29
to United States	36-42, 183, 188	Cummins, William	105
Cherokees	54, 59, 74, 75, 189, 190, 192		
Cherubusco, Battle of	120	Dallas	116
Chickomin Prairie	72	County	116, 125, 160, 195
Chicot County	167, 191	Danley, C. C.	139
Chronological Summary	186	Danville	110
Churchill, Thomas J.	145, 166, 185, 202	Dardanelle	110
Choctaws	59, 191, 192	Davidsonville	53, 189, 190
Cities, Government of	226	De Abbadie	32, 182, 186
Civil Government of the Country	207	Deaf Mute Institute	152
Claborne, William C. C.	41, 183, 188	De L'Epinay	30, 182, 186
Clarendon	81	Democratic Party	104, 106, 111, 115
Cark County	54, 57, 80, 87, 116, 190	Denton, James L.	178
William	49, 54, 184	Des Arc	121
Clay County	158, 200	Desha, Ben	60, 105, 107
Henry	115, 135	County	107, 154, 194
Clayton, Powell	100, 149, 150, 155, 163, 184, 199, 200	De Soto, Hernando	14, 15, 186
John M.	158	De Tonti, Henry	21, 22, 26, 27, 186
Cleburne County	160, 202	Dewall's Bluff	121, 130
Patrick R.	141, 170, 179	Dewitt	52
Clerk, County	224	Dorsey, S. W.	158
Supreme Court	221	Dover	79
Cleveland County	160, 200	Drennen, John	56
Grover	160, 171, 202	Drew County	121, 122, 154, 195, 199
Clinton	88	Thomas S.	115, 121, 184, 194, 195
Clover Bend	53	Duval, Dr. Elias R.	179
Cockrill, Sterling R.	171, 202	Dwight, Old	79
Colleges	57, 82, 216		
Columbia	68, 101	Eagle, James P.	174, 175, 185, 203
County	126, 153, 190	Eakin, John R.	58, 179
Commissioner of State Lands	217	Earthquake, New Madrid	49, 189
Commissioners, United States	214	Easton, Rufus	51
Common Schools	112, 152, 177	École à Fabrè	80, 113
Compromise, Missouri	134, 135, 136	Educational Facilities	177
Congress	211	Electoral College, System of	209
Constable, Duties of	225	Commission	165
Constitution	92, 139, 146, 150, 161, 168, 170, 201, 208, 214	Vote	104, 111, 116, 123, 127, 128, 129, 137, 152, 194, 199, 202, 203
National	207	Elizabeth	83
and Union Party	105, 129	Elkhorn, Battle of	143, 197
Contreras, Battle of	120	Emancipation	143, 197
Conway	159	Emigration	83, 85
County	70, 88, 110, 192, 150, 190	Encarnacion, Hacienda of	120
Henry W.	55, 56, 59, 70, 73, 105, 125, 179	English, E. H.	171, 178, 195, 201, 202
James S.	70, 84, 97, 98, 100, 108, 184, 192, 193	Eskridge, Thomas P.	56
John R.	108, 193, 194	Explorations	47, 186
Elias N.	106, 125, 126, 127, 179, 184, 195		
Corning	158	Fabrè, École à	80, 113
Coroner	225	Fagan, James F.	144
		Farrelly, Terence	68

	PAGE.		PAGE.
Faulkner County.....	159, 200	Harrison.....	153
Fayetteville.....	76, 100, 110	Benjamin.....	173, 203
Federal Courts.....	213	William Henry.....	46, 104, 111, 183
Federalist Party.....	104, 106	Hayes, R. B.....	165, 202
Fellows, John R.....	179	Heber.....	170
Fillmore, Millard.....	123	Heckaton.....	54, 69
Finances of the State.....	163, 201	Helena.....	60, 101
First White Settlement.....	22	Battle of.....	145, 197
Fishback Amendment.....	103, 167, 202, 215	Hempstead County.....	54, 58, 65, 72, 80, 87, 126, 151, 153, 160, 190
Flanagan, Harris.....	141, 184, 192, 197	Edward.....	51, 54, 189
Fletcher, Thomas.....	141, 184, 197	Hennepin, Louis.....	18, 186
Forrest City.....	72	Hill, L. D.....	139
Fort Smith.....	111, 125	Hindman, Thomas C.....	105, 144
Fowler, Absalom.....	105	Hogan, Edmund.....	68
Franklin.....	72	Holford Bonds.....	101, 103, 194
County.....	107, 154, 193, 194	Hot Spring County.....	80, 113, 192, 153, 158, 199
Free Soil Party.....	123, 134	Hot Springs.....	15, 158
Freshet.....	85, 193	Howard, Benjamin A.....	48, 51, 183, 184, 189
Fugitive Slave Law.....	136	County.....	160, 200
Fulton County.....	113, 158, 199	James.....	110
William S.....	77, 89, 97, 113, 116, 184, 192, 193	Hughes, Simon P.....	106, 172, 173, 185, 202, 203
Gaines Claim.....	150	Huntsville.....	99, 194
Gainesville.....	87	Iberville.....	27, 28, 186
Galvez, Bernardo de.....	33, 183, 188	Ildefonso, St., Treaty of.....	7, 35
Garfield, James A.....	167, 168, 202	Independence County.....	67, 88, 90, 100, 170, 191
Garland, A. H.....	58, 106, 158, 162, 179, 184, 201, 202	Izard County.....	71, 88, 91, 113, 158, 160, 192
County.....	80, 158, 200	George.....	69, 77, 154, 192
Gazette.....	63, 191	Jackson.....	53
Geographical Situation.....	177	Andrew.....	83, 180, 190, 191
Geological Survey.....	112	County.....	83, 90, 192
Geologist.....	217	Jacksonport.....	83
Government of the County, Civil.....	207	Jasper.....	113
Military.....	227	Jefferson County.....	81, 192, 153, 154, 160
of Cities and Towns.....	226	Thomas.....	30, 37, 41, 42, 104
Governor, Powers and Duties of.....	216	Jenkins' Ferry, Battle of.....	147, 198
Governors, French.....	29, 30, 31, 32, 182	Johnson, Andrew.....	140, 198
Spanish.....	32, 33, 182, 183	Benjamin.....	63, 89, 123, 178, 191, 195
American.....	41, 46, 47, 48, 49, 60, 61, 69, 77, 80, 97, 109, 114, 115, 122, 123, 125, 127, 129, 141, 146, 150, 155, 159, 173, 174, 183, 184, 185, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 201, 202, 203	County.....	88, 154, 193
Grand Jury.....	223	Richard H.....	129, 160
Grant, U. S.....	152, 153, 156, 161, 190, 200	Robert W.....	106, 127, 151, 179
County.....	153, 200	Thomas.....	194
Grants of Lands.....	33, 34	Joliet.....	17
Gray, William.....	119	Jones, Daniel W.....	58
Greene County.....	87, 107, 128, 153, 199, 200	James K.....	58, 106, 173, 179
Greenville.....	53	Jonesboro.....	128
Greenwood.....	125	Jouett, Charles.....	62, 190
Hadley, O. A.....	155, 185, 200	Joutel.....	25
Hale Claim.....	159	Judges.....	47, 62, 124, 126, 157, 165, 198, 199, 200, 201, 212
Hampton.....	125	Appointment and Duties of.....	212, 220, 221
Hardin, Joseph.....	56	Jurymen.....	222
Hardships in Domestic Life.....	144	Justices of the Peace.....	225
Harrington, Bartley.....	68	Kappa.....	11
Harrisburg.....	70	Kerlerec, Baron de.....	32, 182, 186
Harrisburgh.....	107	Know-Nothing Party.....	105
		Kuklux.....	152

	PAGE.		PAGE.
Lafayette County .....	72, 192, 199	McGarrah, James .....	76
La Harpe, Bernard de .....	180	McHenry, Samuel .....	55
Lake Village .....	68	McIntosh, James .....	143
La Salle .....	18-25, 182, 186	McLean, Neill .....	62
Laussat, Pierre Clement .....	41, 183, 188	Meigs, R. J. ....	47
Law, John .....	30, 186	Melbourne .....	71
Lawrence Count .....	53, 67, 90, 152, 189	Memphis & Little Rock Railroad .....	130,
Lawrenceville .....	81	195, 196	
Lebanon .....	108	Mexican War .....	111, 195
Lee County .....	100, 200	Military Board .....	139
Robert E .....	100	Military Government of the Country .....	227
Legislature .....	219	Militia .....	152, 199, 201, 246, 217, 229
Lemos, Gayoso de .....	33, 183, 188	Miller County .....	65, 100, 191
Letcher, Robert P .....	62, 100	James .....	60, 61, 65, 184, 190, 191
Lewis, Eli J .....	52, 199	William R .....	164, 179, 184, 201, 202
Merriwether .....	47, 48, 183, 189	Miro, Estevan .....	33, 183, 188
Lewisburg .....	70	Mississippi County .....	86, 128, 193, 100, 200
Louisville .....	72	Missouri Compromise .....	134, 136
Liberty .....	71	Territory .....	50, 51, 53, 54, 57, 59, 189
Lincoln, Abraham .....	129, 130, 138, 143-149,	Mitchell, Charles B .....	151
County .....	154, 196	Monroe County .....	81, 100, 102
Litchfield .....	83	James .....	37, 38, 40, 42
Little River County .....	151, 100	Montgomery County .....	113, 153
Little Rock .....	55, 56, 95, 111	Monticello .....	60, 121
Capture of .....	140, 198	Morrill, E. J. and G. H .....	70
Little Rock & Fort Smith Railroad .....	27,	Morrilton .....	70
105, 200, 201		Moscoco, Luys de .....	15, 20
Livingston, Robert R .....	37, 40	Mount Moriah .....	15
Logan County .....	154, 200	Olive .....	71
James .....	154	Vernon .....	71
Lonoke .....	159	Mountain Home .....	158
County .....	150, 200	View .....	161
Loughborough Bonds .....	104	Murphy, Isaac .....	139, 146, 149, 184, 198
James M .....	164	Napoleon .....	168
Louisiana, Purchase .....	7, 30-42, 188	Neill, Gordon .....	68
District of .....	40, 189	Nevada County .....	153, 200
Territory of .....	40, 189	New Madrid County .....	51, 53
Upper, Settlement of .....	35, 42	District of .....	47, 189
Loveley County .....	71, 72, 74, 75, 192	Earthquake .....	49, 189
Peter .....	71	Newport .....	83
Purchase .....	71, 74	Newton, Robert C .....	106
Lucas, John B. C .....	47	Thomas W .....	68, 105, 113
Madison .....	72	Norristown .....	79
County .....	98, 97, 193	Occupants, Indian .....	8
Magnolia .....	126	Oden, Robert C .....	56, 68, 105
Malvern .....	80	Officers, State .....	214, 215
Map, Land from Indian Treaties .....	10	County .....	223
De Soto's Route .....	16	Offices .....	78
United States .....	137	O'Hara, William .....	56
Marbois, Francis Barbé .....	38	Old Dwight .....	79
Marianna .....	160	Organization of Arkansas Territory .....	62
Marion .....	70, 71	Louisiana Territory .....	46
County .....	91, 108, 153, 158, 193	Missouri Territory .....	50
Mark's Mills, Battle of .....	147, 198	O'Riley, Alexander .....	32, 183, 187
Marquette .....	17, 186	Orleans, Territory of .....	40, 50, 188
Marshall .....	108	Osages .....	8, 9, 189, 190
Martial Law .....	104, 199, 201	Treaty with .....	10, 48
Martin, Allen .....	56	Osceola .....	86
Mayor, Duties of .....	226	Overflow .....	85
McClure, John .....	106, 200	Ouachita County .....	112, 125, 126, 153
McDonald, Alex .....	151	Owen, David Dale .....	112



	PAGE.		PAGE.
Ozark.....	107	Quapaw Line.....	9, 56
Panther.....	116	Quapaws .....	S, 11, 53, 56, 68, 69, 190, 191, 193
Parachita.....	75	Quesenbury, William.....	179
Paragould.....	87	Quitman.....	170
Paris.....	154	Railroads...127, 130, 175, 177, 195, 196, 200,	201, 202
Pea Ridge, Battle of.....	143, 197	Randolph County.....	90, 158, 193, 199
Pellham, William.....	84, 193	Lewis.....	89, 193
Pennywit, Philip.....	73, 192	Read, Opie P.....	179
Perciful Claim.....	159	Robert H.....	179
Period, Colonial.....	7	Reconstruction.....	149, 198, 199
Ante-Territorial.....	46	Rector, Elias.....	179
Territorial.....	61	Henry M.....	129, 139, 159, 190, 197
Ante-Bellum.....	97	Wharion.....	179
Of the Civil War.....	134	Registration.....	199
Since the Civil War.....	149	Reporter.....	221
Perrier.....	31, 182	Republican Party.....	105, 100, 129, 199
Perry County.....	110, 194	Representatives.....	220
Perryville.....	111	Resources.....	170
Philips County.....	66, 71, 72, 81, 100, 191	Retrocession to France.....	34
Sylvanus.....	66	Reveille.....	154
Thomas.....	60	Review.....	43, 93, 131, 175, 180
Pierce, Franklin.....	127	Rice, B. F.....	100, 151
Pike, Albert.....	105, 179	Richmond.....	151
County.....	87, 100, 193	Rigaud, Marquis de.....	32, 182
Zebulon M.....	47, 87	Ringo, Daniel.....	58, 124, 194, 195
Pine Bluff.....	82	Rison.....	160
Battle at.....	146, 198	Ritchey, Adam.....	53, 190
Pocahontas.....	90	Rivers, Improvement of.....	80
Poinsett County.....	107, 128, 193, 194	Roane, John Seiden.....	119, 122, 123, 181, 195
Point of Rocks.....	9	Rockport.....	80
Political Parties.....	104, 105	Rose, U. M.....	179
Polk County.....	116, 125, 160, 195	Rosston.....	153
James K.....	115, 110, 194	Rough and Ready.....	121
Pope County.....	79, 88, 110, 182	Russell, William.....	34, 50
John.....	77, 80, 184, 192	Russellville.....	79
Population.....S, 34, 62, 65, 81, 111, 124, 129	153, 160, 176	Salcedo.....	33, 183, 188
Table of.....	204, 205	Salem.....	114
Gains in.....	206	Saline County.....	91, 153, 158, 193
Porter, Andrew.....	120	Saracen.....	69
Postoffice.....52, 53, 55, 66, 76, 82, 83, 110,	189, 190	Sauvolle.....	29, 152, 187
Powhatan.....	53	Schools, Common.....	112, 152, 177
Prairie County.....	121, 159, 195	Scotia.....	79
Grove, Battle of.....	144, 197	Scott, Andrew.....	62, 63, 79, 109, 191
Prescott.....	153	County.....	88, 110, 125, 154, 193
President ..104, 111, 115, 123, 127, 128, 129,	137, 149, 152, 156, 165, 167, 168, 171, 173,	George W.....	62
194, 199, 200, 202, 203		John.....	51
How Elected.....	209, 210	Scull, James.....	62, 82
List of.....	106	Searcy.....	90
Powers of.....	208, 228	County.....	91, 108, 100, 193, 194
Price, Sterling.....	145, 148, 198	Richard.....	64, 108
Princeton.....	116	Sebastian County.....	125, 195
Prohibition Party.....	105	William K.....	123, 125, 151
Prosecuting Attorney.....	222	Secession.....	137, 138, 190, 197
Proclamation of Name of State.....	12	Secretary of State.....	217
Pulaski County...54, 55, 66, 70, 90, 91, 121,	159, 190, 1	Senators in Congress .....	97, 110, 122, 123,
Pullen, John W. and James T.....	82	How Chosen.....	127, 151, 155, 158, 162, 163, 200
Purchase of Louisiana.....	7, 36, 42	State.....	219, 220
		Settlement, First White.....	22
		of Upper Louisiana.....	35

	PAGE.		PAGE.
Sevier, Ambrose H.....	73, 75, 92, 97, 105, 120, 179, 193	Treaty, of St. Ildefonso.....	7
County.....	75, 116, 151, 160, 192, 199	Troops, Organization of.....	119, 139
Sharp County.....	152, 199	Service of.....	140, 197
Ephraim.....	152	Trustees of Bank.....	102
Sheridan.....	153		
Sheriff, Duties of.....	224	Ulloa, Antonio de.....	32, 183, 187
Shreve, H. M.....	89	Union, Admission into the.....	91, 92, 93, 184, 193
Slavery.....	92, 118, 134, 135, 136, 143	County.....	79, 110, 126, 192
Slaves, Emancipation of.....	143, 197	Labor Party.....	105
Smith, Thomas.....	178	University.....	76, 77
V. V.....	201	Unzaga, Louis de.....	33, 183, 188
Smithville.....	53	Upper Louisiana.....	35, 42, 46
Sovereignty, Transfer of.....	41, 42		
Spelling of Name.....	12	Valliere, Don Joseph, Grant to.....	33, 52
Star City.....	154	Van Buren.....	60, 101
Stars, Falling of.....	193	County.....	88, 193, 160, 170
State, Admission as.....	93, 193	Martin.....	66, 104, 111, 193
State House.....	79, 193	Varner.....	154
Steamboat.....	73, 84, 192	Vaudreuil, Marquis de.....	32, 186
Stacke, Frederick.....	146, 147, 198	Villemont.....	68
Stillwell, Joseph.....	34	Don Carlos de.....	33, 34, 52, 68
Stone County.....	160, 200	Vote, Electoral.....	104, 111, 116, 123, 127, 128, 129, 137, 152, 165, 167, 171, 174, 193, 194, 195
Stroud, Adam.....	58	Voters, Qualification of.....	227
St. Charles, Skirmish at.....	144		
St. Francis County.....	72, 107, 142, 160, 192	Waldron.....	88
St. Louis.....	35, 42, 46, 50	Walker, David.....	198
Arkansas & Texas Railroad.....	177, 202	J. D.....	165
Iron Mountain & Southern Railroad.....	127, 154, 200	War, Beginning of.....	134, 138
Streets.....	50	Progress of.....	138-143, 197
Sugar Loaf.....	170	Brooks and Baxter.....	161
Summary of Events.....	186	Mexican.....	117, 195
Superintendent of Public Instruction.....	219	Washburne, C. P.....	179
Supreme Court.....	212	Washington.....	58, 101, 119
Survey.....	59, 67, 70, 84, 104	County.....	72, 75, 99, 192
Geological.....	112	Watkins, George C.....	195
Surveyor, County.....	225	Watson.....	108
		Wheeler, Amos.....	55
Taylor, Zachary.....	123, 195	Whig Party.....	77, 106, 111, 115
Telegraph Line.....	196	White County.....	90, 170, 193
Territory of Arkansas.....	51	Wilkinson, James.....	41, 47, 183, 188, 189
Louisiana.....	46	James B.....	47, 189
Missouri.....	50	Williams, A. B.....	55
Texarkana.....	65	Samuel W.....	139
Texas, Annexation of.....	118	Wilson, John.....	92, 101
Revolution.....	117	Wilshire, W. W.....	109
Thomas, Wyatt C.....	179	Winfield, A. R.....	179
Thompson, Davis.....	104	Winter Families, Grant to.....	34
Toledo.....	100	Wittsburg.....	142
Tory Party.....	104	Wood, Allen.....	120
Totten, B. C.....	139	Woodruff County.....	142, 197, 199
Towns, Government of.....	226	William E., Sr.....	63, 106, 142, 179, 190
Trans-Mississippi Department.....	144		
Trapnall, Frederick W.....	105	Yell, Archibald.....	97, 109, 119, 120, 179, 184, 193, 194, 195
Treasurer.....	217, 224	County.....	110, 154, 194
Treaty, Cherokee.....	54, 74, 180, 190, 192	Yellville.....	91
Choctaw.....	59, 191, 192	Yonley, T. D. W.....	198
Osage.....	9, 48, 189, 190		
of Paris.....	32		
Quapaw.....	9, 53, 68, 190, 193		



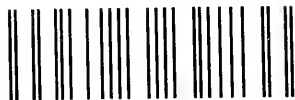








LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 646 055 0

